



Emperor of The Cosmos

XingHe DaDi

星河大帝

Author : Meng Ru Shen Ji

Status : 1077 chapters (completed)

Synopsis [From Chinese Website] :

When humans step foot into the Galactic Era, the ancient art of cultivation thrives once again.

Regardless of the times, cultivation is never obsolete. In the Buddhist texts, Bodhi asked Buddha:

“How does one control his heart to become a buddha?”

This one sentence summarises the true essence of cultivation: mastery over one’s heart.

The heart is very powerful, and is the reason why the Monkey King is also called the ‘Heart Monkey’. Everyone’s heart is a Monkey King, master

the monkey and one can achieve ascension.

Allow me to demonstrate to you the true essence of cultivation in this book.

Synopsis by Xianxiaworld:

What is unique about this novel is it deviates from the standard backdrop of an 'ancient' world and is set in the contemporary future, the Galactic Era. Advancements in technology on Earth has given rise to methods of cultivation and a super breed of humans with unmatched physical prowess. Man has long discovered ways of space travel and have started to invade other planets in bids for resources. In these conquests they come across many civilizations with cultivation techniques, some which are even more powerful than technology...

Back at home on Earth, there is a boy with average innate talent. But one chance meeting transforms his fate, and you and I shall watch him rise to the top to become the Emperor of the Cosmos!

Info :

<http://www.novelupdates.com/series/emperor-of-the-cosmos/>

Raws : None!

Translator :

<http://www.xianxiaworld.net/Emperor-of-The-Cosmos/>

NejiSpira
wuxiatranslationsdl.wordpress.com



Table of chapters :

Chapter 1 - Crystal Contemplation

Chapter 2 - The Prodigy Brother

Chapter 3 - Fetal Respiration of the Cat Chapter 4 - Dream of how many Milleniums?

Chapter 5 - Boneless Jujitsu Chapter 6 - Test of Ability Chapter 7 - Dragon Claw Subjugation

Chapter 8 - Overdraw of Life

Chapter 9 - The Three Realm Theory Chapter 10 - Discovery of The Brigand Chapter 11 - Hypnosis

Chapter 12 - Boneless Dragon Snake

Chapter 13 - For Humanity

Chapter 14 - Brain of The Universe Chapter 15 - The Arcanum of Hand Signs Chapter 16 - Learning Hypnotism Chapter 17 - Spiritual Emperor Seal Chapter 18 - Sleep Test

Chapter 19 - Curing Xue Bear

Chapter 20 - The hand sign goes, the illness dissipates Chapter 21 - The underground black market Chapter 22 - Zheng Wenbing

Chapter 23 - Lara Luo

Chapter 24 - I Can Also Whip You Chapter 25 - Super Protein

Chapter 26 - Injection

Chapter 27 - Increase in Physical Capabilities Chapter 28 - Being Investigated Chapter 29 - Huge Compensation 1

Chapter 30 - Huge Compensation 2

Chapter 31 - The Final Exams Chapter 32 - Martial Expert Trial Chapter 33 - Enrichment Class Chapter 34 - Mysterious Phone Call

Chapter 35 - Protective Amulet

Chapter 36 - Train to Kill?

Chapter 37 - Tit for Tat

Chapter 38 - Dream to Power

Chapter 39 - Blood Feud

Chapter 40 - One Stroke of the Sword to the Throat Chapter 41 - Dream of Returning Home Chapter 42 - The Fall of the Big Ship

Chapter 43 - Training Exercise Concludes

Chapter 44 - Teaching in The Dreams

Chapter 1 - Crystal Contemplation

Sleeping god, sleeping god, lost in time during his sleep on high pillars.

His character perfects itself as his essence spirit and energy slumbers.

Qi returns to the primary meridian, and his breaths flow naturally.

Don't be uncollected, stay calm. Gentle nourishment creates mercury and your character will be perfected.

Waiting for the mercurial flower to appear.

Nothing is lost, and one must prevent oneself from being too idle, and to achieve the real level of attainment. The flow of Qi in the middle of the body

Repeat seven times, not very hard: repeat nine times, and why complain.

Watch silently as the dragon and tiger battle on the warfield, and secretly disorder the order of Ying Yang.

People say I am a hazy man, but I tried sleeping without any success

If you can learn it, it is the true zen

If you can nourish it, it is the real fetal energy

A crouching dragon rises to the sky as soon as it gets up

This crouching method, who was it taught by?

Shaggy Toaist, Zhang Sanfeng

This poem is called the Hymn of the Hibernating Dragon. The author is Zhang Sanfeng who is the creator of Taichi.

It describes that people practising cultivation and achieve the state of 'Unification with Nature' do so through sleep.

Currently, the year is 2250 and humans have long since entered the galactic era. The ancient art of cultivation is not declining but instead flourishing.

"Deep Sleep! You must enter Deep Sleep in order to increase your life energy!"

A piercing voice echoed in the 3000 metres squared sports stadium.

The voice came from a female teacher.

She had large round eyes and peachy cheeks, as well as a soft and elegant figure. She was certainly a beautiful lady. However, her manner and vigour were fierce and without restraint. She was like a curved sword. People who met her eyes had a sense of suffocation as if their throats were cut.

Behind him, Jiang Li's best friend, Guo Meng, said to him in a small voice.

"Jiang Li, Miss Blade is throwing a tantrum."

"Shsh..." Jiang Li moved about his fingers, "Keep it down. Deep Sleep is not so easy. Out of the 8 hundred thousand students at the school, it's uncertain whether there are even 50 students who can enter Deep Sleep."

"Miss Blade" was the nickname for this female teacher. Apparently, she used to be a soldier and became a teacher after retirement from service.

Jiang Li was a year 12 student currently in spirit class.

Spiritual training was the most important class for modern day students. It even exceeded physical training in importance.

Through meditation, musing, contemplation and guidance..... these trainings could allow development of a stronger inner self, concentration of spirit, better control over breathing, heart beat, pulse and other bodily functions.

When spiritual training had reached an advanced state, the phenomenon "Deep Sleep" would occur.

Prior research indicated that one hour of Deep Sleep for humans had a better effect than seven to eight hours of normal sleep.

How much time could be saved for study and other things if people slept seven hours less each day?

The effect of one hour of Deep Sleep could render a person to be energetic for the whole day with superior memory. In the long term, it could improve one's health and extend their life.

"You people shouldn't think that spiritual training is unimportant. Let me give you an example. There were two patients with a lethal condition. One of them didn't know of his medical condition and lived happily every day. As a result, the immune cells in his body increased and killed the diseased cells and he was healthy again. The other patient knew of his condition and lost all hope and spirit. He died in a few days even though he still had hope of recovering." Miss Blade continued teaching her class, and her sharp voice reached out to everyone, "This is the power of the spirit!"

"Zhang Yue!"

Miss Blade pointed at a 1.9m tall and handsome male student in front of her, "You are the only person to have gone into Deep Sleep in this class of few thousand students. Give everyone a demonstration."

"I don't think it's necessary to demonstrate this miss." Zhang Yue was the class captain but he looked down on everyone in his class. He sneered, "Spiritual training is a gift. You're a genius if you can comprehend. If you can't comprehend it, then you're useless for your whole life."

"This guy is so arrogant!" Guo Meng said angrily.

"He relies purely on resources." Jiang Li was contemptuous, "His family is wealthy. He burned expensive incense every night before sleep to calm his spirit and supplement his brain. On top of that, his family also hired a hypnotist to hypnotise him. Without the help of these resources, there's no way he could've reached Deep Sleep. If he demonstrates on the spot, he would expose himself.

Guo Meng nodded, "Yea, only those who can go into Deep Sleep at anytime without assistance are geniuses! But his life force is becoming stronger and stronger, it has reached 0.9."

"What's he got to be cocky about? His grades in the school is only just top 100." Another student said in disdain, "Not even the first three in the school can get guaranteed entry into the Astral University."

"Yea, you're only good if you can get into Astral University."

"Keep it down, if Zhang Yue hears he will come looking for trouble with us. A life force of 0.9 can easily take care of more than ten of us."

The students discussed quietly, "If only my family could afford a hypnotist. That way, I can be hypnotised into Deep Sleep everyday, and my physical abilities and spirit will all increase."

"You wish, the hypnotist that can hypnotise people into Deep Sleep are Secondary Hypnotists. Each time they hypnotise, they charge more than 1000 star coins!"

Astral University was humanity's best educational institution. It was the dream of countless number of students.

Life force was the students' grades. It included physical abilities and education.

Out of the two, physical abilities took priority and education was less important. This was of significant difference to education two hundred years ago.

Tests with countless questions had long been abolished by the education system of the galactic era.

Two hundred years ago, high schools centred on literacy grades. The result was that some people fainted and some people died of exhaustion after running 1km. This had become a great joke nowadays.

Jiang Li's life energy was 0.7. It is an average score, one that just passed. However, he could sprint 100m in 10 seconds, which was close to the world champion's time, two hundred years ago.

"Okay Zhang Yue, you may sit." Miss Blade didn't have the slightest intentions of criticising him as he was the most outstanding student in the class. "You shouldn't be too confident. Deep Sleep has three stages and you're only at the first stage, so your life energy is only 0.9. This is far from what will get you into Astral University. Once you reach the third stage, your spirit will sleep but your will will not sleep. Your body also sleeps but your will doesn't sleep. Going into sleep during exercise is the ancient art of the [Drunken Fist]. Your mind activates the adrenaline inside

of you, which is like an analeptic shot, making your punches very powerful. Only then will you rise to the skies."

"Rest assured miss, I will definitely reach a life force of 1 by the end of this semester," Zhang Yue was full of confidence, "and next semester, I will be even stronger!"

The students with a life force of 1 were crazy. Their running speed exceeded those of leopards, their strength could tear apart tigers, and their literacy subjects were also top amongst their peers. They were the all rounded talented people.

"Now, begin training with me."

Miss Blade clapped her hands and sat with her legs crossed on the mat.

"First, you must calm yourselves and let me tell you about [Crystal Contemplation]. Imagine your bodies as a crystal with many impurities! Breathe in and out. When you breathe in, imagine the air as water, washing your insides. When you breathe out, the water brings out the impurities. Gradually, your body will become more and more crystal clear!"

[Crystal Contemplation].

It was the main class of spiritual training.

To clear thoughts from their minds people did this through contemplating like a crystal.

This was an elementary type of contemplation and it was very hard to train to the advanced stages. At the same time, it was decided to be the safest and most effective contemplation method after the research into countless contemplation methods by many spiritual masters. Other ones such as the [Buddhist Impure Pagoda] and [White Bones Pagoda] were all likely to cause mental disorders and drive people crazy with hallucinations.

On the screen in the training room, a three dimensional crystal projection appeared. It was lively and carved into a human form.

This human shaped crystal breathed. At the beginning, the body was full of impurities but it gradually became more transparent and eventually became crystal clear.

The mind was clear like a mirror.

This was the image for contemplation

Jiang Li was also trying to contemplate and breathe but he just couldn't enter that state. He couldn't focus.

This was common for most people.

"How can I concentrate and enter the state of [Crystal Contemplation]?" Jiang Li was getting more and more distressed. But the more impetuous he was, the more he couldn't concentrate.

After a set of [Crystal Contemplation] moves were finished, the teacher Miss Blade scanned the class of a few thousand students and glared sternly. She saw that more than ninety percent of the students were pretending to work. Their breaths were short, and their heart rates were fast. Suddenly, she yelled, "Stop!"

The students opened their eyes

Miss Blade was preparing to scold them but thought about it again and then used a slow voice, "What is inner strength? It is mastery over one's heart. You guys probably read a book by Jing Yong called "Tian Long Ba Bu" two hundred years ago. Inside was a passage about the secret to inner strength from the Shaolin temple's [Iron Palm Technique]. If you can't sleep and let your thoughts fly away, how will you conquer your heart? In actual fact, this came from the classic book "Wu Deng Yuan Hui" of the zen practitioners but novelists saying it is a secret way of practising inner strength is also correct. This is the real inner strength. It isn't ki flying about when you slice your palm. Haha, it is your mind interfering with matter, how can it be easy. Okay back on topic. When you contemplate, wandering thoughts and inability to focus is a very normal phenomena. Even zen artists who have practiced the art for many years can not overcome this problem. The heart is like a Monkey. The heart is the monkey king. It isn't easy to master it."

"Spiritual training is first Deep Sleep, then Stasis. The next step is Fetal Respiration. Each state is harder than the one before." Miss Blade waved her hands, "I won't explain if you don't understand, class dismissed!"

Hearing school was over, all the students relaxed. When Miss Blade left the gymnasium, the students were ready to leave in groups. Jiang Li was also ready to go home and eat dinner.

"Jiang Li!"

Suddenly he was called and a tall figure appeared in front of him.

It was Zhang Yue.

"What?" Jiang Li took a step back. He was only 1.75m. Facing the 1.9m Zhang Yue made him feel like he was suffocating. This was the oppression from life force.

Zhang Yue's life force of 0.9 was too strong. In a fight, not even ten Jiang Li's would be a match.

Even students with a life force of 0.8 could defeat four or five Jiang Lis.

A difference of 0.1 in life force meant a huge difference in physical capabilities.

"I heard you go to the park to feed homeless cats everyday?" Zhang Yue was contemptuous. He held his hands behind his back and looked in condescension, "Lara feeds with you sometimes too? I warn you, you better give up on those pathetic motives."

"What right do you have to tell me what to do?" Jiang Li was angry.

"Very simple, because of my strength and my family's status." Zhang Yue cracked his bones fearing the onlookers, "Remember, never try to argue

with me or I will rip your mouth apart. Lara is not someone you can be intimate with. A lame toad may never eat swan meat.”

“Class captain, class captain.” Guo Meng saw Jiang Li was getting in trouble and came up immediately, “Lara is one of the four goddesses of the school, us normal students would never have those thoughts. Oh right, Jiang Li’s brother is finishing school. They are eating dinner together later at home.”

“Jiang Tao!” Zhang Yue was scrupulous upon hearing this name. Nonetheless, he sneered, “This is a warning today. If I still see you feeding cats with Lara, you will know the consequences.”

He turned and left as he finished his words.

“That was close.” Guo Meng was sweating, “We can’t even resist if Zhang Yue is to beat us up.”

“Let’s go, he won’t dare to fight at school.” Jiang Li was furious but he didn’t leave behind any tough words. He knew the difference between him and Zhang Yue were too great. It was pointless to act tough but that does not mean he was admitting defeat.

“You should be careful, Zhang Yue is very strong and his family is also wealthy. If he targets you, you will be in trouble.” Guo Meng was very worried, “I think you shouldn’t see Lara for the moment. Lara is a well known member of the school with a life force of 1. Her family is also very wealthy. You will cause many trouble if you interact with her.”

"I know, I would kick the prick." Jiang Li's eyes shimmered. He longed for strength.

Chapter 2 - The Prodigy Brother

At night, Jiang Li came home from school and immediately noticed the thick savoury smell of meat. His nose twitched and he gulped down his drool.

"Mum, what meat is this, it smells so good?"

Mum poked a head out of the kitchen, "I just bought this Sha Luo beast meat today, come drink a bowl of soup."

"This is for you brother." In the living room, his father, Jiang Zhendong, coughed, "This meat is 600 star coins a kilo." Star coins was the currency for humans in the galactic era. It was very sturdy, and one star coin was worth one gram of gold.

His parents' monthly salary together was more than 100 star coins which was enough for the whole family to live a slightly wealthy life. However, it would be inadequate for expensive supplements.

Sha Luo was a type of galactic beast. It was very hard to capture but its meat was a great supplement, and eating it could improve one's body and increase one's strength by increasing the muscle density. Compared to Ginseng and other earthly herbs and medicine, its effects were ten times better.

"Dad, I know. Brother needs supplements for life force right now." Jiang Li shrugged his shoulders. He was very understanding. His brother's

grades were the best, and these extravagant products should be used on him.

Knock knock knock

There was the sound of footsteps. The door opened and a youth appeared in front of the door.

It was his brother Jiang Tao.

He had a very sturdy build with a height of 1.9m. Although he was only 16, he was a head taller than Jiang Li. His body appeared to have explosive power, and his eyes were sharp like that of a hawk. He had an imposing manner and was also one of the well known people in the school.

Jiang Li was now 17 but his height is only 1.75m.

The two brothers were in year 11 and year 12 respectively.

"Dad, mum, brother, I'm back."

"How was your test today? Did your life force increase?" Jiang Zhengdong could not wait to ask and even his mum working in the kitchen came out.

"My life force test grade was 0.95, I had a breakthrough. I also got a 30 star coin scholarship." His brother Jiang Tao took out a red envelope.

"Good..... Very good..." Jiang Zhengdong was full of happiness, "Work hard, you must do your best to try and get into Astral University. The whole family's hope rests on our shoulders. Your mum cooked you some Sha Luo meat, so hurry and eat it."

"Big brother, you should eat some too." Jiang Tao looked at Jiang Li, "Your life force grade has constantly been at 0.7. This is because of malnutrition. If you eat some Sha Luo meat, your constitution will increase."

"That's unnecessary." Jiang Li waved his hand, "My talent is a far cry from yours. It would be a waste even if I ate it. Little brother, you should finish the meat first. Otherwise when little sister comes back and wants to eat it, mum and dad will be troubled."

This was a family of five consisting of mum, dad, Jiang Li, Jiang Tao and a thirteen year old sister, Jiang Xuan.

"Wow, big brother, your life force reached 0.95?" The thirteen year old little girl at the doorway walked in. It was Jiang Xuan.

"I heard there is more than two hundred thousand students in year 11 and big brother is ranked around top ten."

"Ha, little sister is back." Jiang Tao grabbed a seat, "Although 0.95 is very good in the school, but it is still far from the score required for Astral University. I will reach 1 sooner or later."

"Little brother, don't get yourself too tired." Jiang Li showed care in his

eyes, "Out of the eight hundred thousand students in our school, those with a life force of 1.0 are less than ten. They are all basically children of the wealthy and everyday they eat super supplements. Our family cannot afford that. Training without sufficient nutrition may have the opposite effect."

"It's alright." Jiang Tao didn't really care, "Big brother, I have already entered the third stage of Deep Sleep. I have already begun Stasis training these few days. I will let those people know that resources will never beat aptitude!"

"What? Stasis training?" Jiang Li was astonished., "Little brother, you're not kidding me right?"

"Really?" Jiang Zhendong, their mother and their little sister, Jiang Xuan, were all amazed.

Jiang Tao was a prodigy and soon he showed his talent. Since junior high school, he could enter Deep Sleep every night through training.

And since that time, he slept only one hour a day but was still energetic for the whole day. Meanwhile, Jiang Li had to sleep for eight hours to have energy. How could the two be compared? And now, he was even better. He actually began Stasis training.

The buddhist text "Da Zhi Du Lun" said, "One who achieves stasis cannot be harmed by fire or water and will not have an end to life." It could be seen from this the wonder of this state. However, according to modern research, in Stasis, the latent potential of the body would be greatly excavated. Internal secretion would change and the body would

become stronger and stronger.

Internal secretion was a magical thing. Change in Internal secretion resulted in people who were morbidly giant or dwarf.

[TL Note: (内分泌/Internal secretion): The body's natural chemical pathways such as hormonal secretions]

"Compared with little brother, the really cocky Zhang Yue in our class is trash."

Jiang Li was gratified. Zhang Yue relied on resources and incense every night and only then could he barely manage Deep Sleep. Meanwhile, Jiang Tao could enter it even in exercise. This was like the ancient [Drunken Fist]. Your spirit is drunk but your will isn't. Drunk people were immensely strong but [Drunken Fist] wasn't a fist you punched after you were drunk. It was spiritual numbness. That was the spirit entering Deep Sleep during exercise according to modern research. When exercising in Deep Sleep, the body does not know wariness. It had unlimited power with adrenalin all being controlled.

However, real Stasis was 100 times harder than this third stage of Deep Sleep. It required a strong will and spirit power to remove excess thoughts and prevent them from occurring. The heart was a monkey. It was agile and intelligent, and mastering it into Stasis required great determination.

In the entire school of 800 thousand students, maybe only one or two people could enter stasis or maybe even none. Jiang Tao would have long reached a life force of 1 if it wasn't for his lack of resources.

Of course, above Stasis was Fetal Respiration. The state of Fetal Respiration could only be achieved by those spiritual masters and human elites. The so called Fetal Respiration was stopping respiration through the mouth and nose and entering a fake state of death. The cells inside the body breathed automatically and would be incessantly evolving perfectly. In due time, the human body would incomprehensibly strong.

There were even greater spiritual states above Fetal Respiration. However, those are the topics of research by the spiritual masters of the elite sections. Normal students won't even be able to know about it.

[ED Note: So for confirmation it goes 3 stages of Deep Sleep -> Stasis -> Fetal Respiration and these are the states of the spirit/mind. Not the usual cultivation bs we usually get so wrap your heads around that people. A state of mind and the life force is the "cultivation level" like we usually get so much simpler than other novels. [Just saying as it confused me greatly when I first read this)]

In the human race, there were two types of strong people. One type was the resource type, the offsprings of the rich. The other type was the talent type, and Jiang Tao was this type.

At this time, the hollow projector television was broadcasting today's news. A beautiful lady was smiling and said, "According to latest statistics, the average life expectancy in the normal human district has reached 100 years old. The average life expectancy of those living in the elite district has reached 180 years old....."

"Woah....." The little sister Jiang Xuan exclaimed, "180 years, that is so

long, when can we move to the elite district.”

“Don’t worry sister, I will let the whole family migrate to the elite district.” Jiang Tao clenched his fists. His body made cracking sounds displaying his blooming life force, fighting will and iron like confidence.

“The elite district....” Jiang Zhendong and the mother both looked on with hope.

The environment the humans inhabited were divided up into the normal and elite district. The people inhabiting the elite district were all elites of the human race, high ranking officers, the super wealthy and the super strong.

Inside, the environment, education, medicine, technology were ahead of the normal district by a few decades.

“Brother, I heard there are people in the elite district who can survive in the vacuum of space and ripe apart beasts in the cosmos with their bare hands. Some of them even have life force reaching the three digit figures. Is it really so?” Jiang Xuan discussed avidly, “Isn’t that superman?”

Jiang Tao patted Jiang Xuan on the head, “Of course, the people in the elite district are the heros and powerhouses of the human race. Two hundred years ago, humans still hadn’t left Earth and were lacking resources. Now, we can traverse worm holes and acquire many valuable herbs and medicine. As a result, the life forces of humans started increasing significantly.”

“Yes.” Jiang Li also taught his sister knowledge, “Two hundred years ago, there were still many countries in the human race. The average life force was only 0.5. Now, even you’re stronger than them.”

“To be honest, the humans of Earth are a god blessed race. That time in 2050, an alien aircraft suddenly crashed. Although the countries of the world fought over this and initiated World War Three, the humans united due to this and researched that spacecraft together. It was this that allowed them to acquire wormhole technology. Otherwise, humans would never have developed to this stage in just two hundred years.” Jiang Li recounted history emotionally.

“Getting into Astral University gives us hope in migrating to the elite district. Astral University is the cradle of the elite.” Jiang Zhendong continued, “Eat. These are herbs and chicken soup. This is a Snow Frog, and this is Ginseng. Although they’re all synthetic, but their effects are the same with the wild ones from before.”

The food on the table was abundant. There were many foods with high nutritional value such as Ginseng, Velvet Antler, Snow Frog, Insect Plant..... They were all artificially synthesised but their nutritional effect were good.

Of course, this was food for civilians. The real wealthy people didn’t eat these stuff.

There was a connection between the average life expectancy in the normal district being 100 years and the consumption of these foods. The food with great nutritional value before could all be synthesised now. However, the real power food were from outer space such as Sha Luo meat. Only those could be served to the wealthy people.

After dinner, Jiang Tao pushed the bowls aside, "Mum, dad and big brother, I'm going to school for Stasis training at night, I need to leave now."

"Be careful."

"I know."

As he was speaking, Jiang Tao moved his body and was already out the door. A [Monkey Shift] was fast as the wind and Jiang Tao disappeared in the blink of an eye. This was equivalent to the martial artists two hundred years ago. Jiang Li couldn't even see these type of movements, much less do them.

"Going out Jiang Tao?"

"I'm going to school for training, uncle Li and auntie Wang..."

"What rapid speed, Mr Jiang has a good son. Meanwhile, we gave our son a countless number of power foods but his life force is still only 0.7. I'm so angry."

"Jiang Tao is a genius. He's a student who could enter Deep Sleep since an early age. Our son can't even go into Deep Sleep."

....

The conversation between the neighbours outside sounded and Jiang

Zhendong and his mother both grinned.

"Mum, dad, I'm going out too." He did the dishes with his little sister after dinner and carried a bucket of prepared cat food.

"Feeding homeless cats again at the park?" Jiang Zhendong frowned but then thought of something and eased his eyebrows. "Go, don't come back late."

"Zhendong, is Jiang Li a bit depraved?" Mum walked out, "But don't blame him, Jiang Tao's aptitude is better than his so all the resources were used on Jiang Tao from the beginning."

"The main problem with Jiang Li is that he has no talent. If he could enter Deep Sleep, he wouldn't be like this. My main concern is that Jiang Tao has too much pressure that it can break him. After all, all our hope rests on him. I myself am incapable and I have no choice but to rely on my son to take back what belongs to me..... But Jiang Li.... *sigh*...." Jiang Zhendong sighed.

Chapter 3 - Fetal Respiration of the Cat

Meow...

It was night time already, yet at a quiet place in the park it was unusually lively. A group of fluffy and cute cats circled Jiang Li, fighting over the cat food in his hands.

Within the cats there was a large 'Striped King' cat that was haughty and bold, and bullied the smaller cats, wrenching away quite a bit of food from them.

"Pia!"

Jiang Li slapped the Striped King cat and with severity warned him, "If you continue to push around the others, there will be no more food for you."

The Striped King cat didn't dare to cause a ruckus, and sulked to the side.

A few of the small bullied cats immediately ran towards Jiang Li purring, rubbed against Jiang Li's legs, goofed around non-stop, and were extremely happy. Jiang Li bent down to caress their tiny heads, checking to see if there were scratch marks on them. The kittens' mum died to a feral dog just last month, and being motherless the kittens' chances of survival were slim, thus Jiang Li had to be especially attentive in catering for them.

17 year old Jiang Li had been feeding these feral cats for 2 years. From the initial few to the current tally of more than 30, the feral cat army was getting bigger and bigger.

Only surrounded by these cats could Jiang Li feel truly at ease, far away from the oppressive atmosphere of school. High school was filled with youthfulness and the ardour of purpose, but should be avoided by those without hope, so as to not feel at loss.

"Come on fellas, eat quicker, otherwise the big black cat will come." Jiang Li ushered.

Recently it had been kind of strange. A bulky black cat that moved as fast as a whirlwind had appeared amongst the feral cats. It would always emerge near the end of the feeding session and devour all the cat food. Sometimes it even took food straight from Jiang Li, clearly unafraid of humans.

Jiang Li had attempted to follow the big black cat quite a few times to see where it had come from, but lost it every time once it entered the sewers.

Whilst in the middle of feeding, Jiang Li eyed the bushes surrounding the park to see when the big black cat would appear.

"Feeding the cats again Jiang Li?"

There was a passage of a clear voice. A girl wearing all white came running out of a path in the woods. She had a tall and slender figure, and

the night wind bellowed at her long hair, a breath of youth.

"Lara, how come you have the time to go for a walk in the park when studies are so intense?" Jiang Li nodded at her.

The girl's name was Lara Zhou, and would come to the park every evening to take a walk. She was the president of the Student Representative Council, and was very influential in the school. Her family was of an impressive background, and countless boys had tried to get close to her only for her to be too lazy to even bother with them.

She did not share the same class with Jiang Li, however, they were both year 12 students.

Class captain Zhang Yue had made many efforts to woo her but to no avail, and so he forbade Jiang Li from interacting with her by threatening to give him a beating every time he saw them together.

"Walking is a way of relaxation." Lara naturally and easily came over to help Jiang Li feed the cats. She gently stroked the little kittens.

The duo fed the cats silently without talking, forming a natural synergy.

Jiang Li fed these feral cats every day, and was seen by Lara more than half a year ago. Lara wanted to help as she also liked these cuddly friends, and so in this timeframe the act of a boy and girl feeding cats in the park every evening became scenic.

"Jiang Li, what are your plans after graduation?" Lara suddenly asked.

"Not much, getting into Astral University is impossible as I only have a life force of 0.7." Jiang Li answered without raising his head, still stroking a kitten.

"Do you have any troubles? Maybe I can help." Lara looked at Jiang Li, eyes determined.

"You help me?" Jiang Li looked a bit incredulous, and then proceeded to shake his head, "Thank you for your kind offer, but I should live my own life."

Having declined Lara's offer, the pair did not speak and it got slightly awkward.

Lara stood up after remaining silent for a while. "From tomorrow onwards I'm going to special training, and will not have the time to feed the cats. Hopefully you can take good care of them."

"No problem, these guys have already become a part of my life." Jiang Li felt himself lighten up, fondling a kitten.

With a sigh Lara turned around and left.

This was the meeting of chance like patches of grass drifting in water, gentle and light, leaving no trace.

"How could I not know that you want to help me? But our karma resides only in feeding feral cats. I cannot make friends with you for your family background is way too grand." Looking at Lara leave, Jiang Li smiled

bitterly deep in his heart. The toad and swan ultimately go their separate ways.

"Shhhhhhhhhhhkr!"

A roar and disturbance akin to that of a leopard cut Jiang Li's thoughts short.

A big black cat leaped out from the bushes, forming small wind currents in its path. Its slick fur shone with luster, like a mini black tiger.

Boom... The strongest cat of the group Striped King was sent flying.

The big black cat rushed to the front, and swiftly wiped the cat food clean, fleeing away after picking up a kitten.

"The black cat is back!"

Jiang Li hurriedly followed after it. It didn't matter that the black cat took food, but it could not take the kitten. "This time I will discover where you're actually from"

Zoom... The big black cat scurried extremely quickly, and like a gale exited the park.

Jiang Li closely tailed. Though his life force was only 0.7, he was not slow at running.

However, truly fast speeds belonged to individuals of the school with powerful life forces. They could sprint 100 meters in 5 seconds. If Jiang Li were to meet those people, he would be beaten instantly.

His brother Jiang Tao's 100 meter sprint time was 6 seconds.

The big black cat's speed was phenomenal. Jiang Li had chased from the park till the river, yet he still couldn't catch up. This was a peculiar cat, with stamina more than 10 times that of a normal cat.

The big black cat suddenly went down into the city sewers.

Jiang Li was unwilling to give up this time, and followed suit.

The sewers were quite wide, almost like an independent underground palace and kingdom. The phenomenon of flash floods killing people hundreds of years ago had long become history. In modern human-inhabited cities, no matter the size of the rain, floods have become impossible to form.

Inside the sewers it was chilly and damp, spacious with paths that lead everywhere like a labyrinth. Surprisingly there were no putrid odors or gaseous stench, an imminent effect of the technological development of mankind.

The sewers could even function as emergency bunkers in case of exploding missiles.

The big black cat continued to leap around in an attempt to get rid of

Jiang Li, but Jiang Li did not easily give in. Under normal circumstances he wouldn't enter the dirty sewers, but today he was persistent in finding out what was special about the cat, and also preventing it from harming the kitten.

One ran whilst the other one chased. Gradually the duo got deeper into the sewers, where traces of human presence were scarce.

Finally, the black cat stopped at a corner, its eyes glowing eerily green. Jiang Li was relieved that the kitten was put down.

Kacha!

Jiang Li got out his microchip phone and illuminated this section of the sewers with bright light.

"What is that? A corpse?"

After seeing what lay before him, Jiang Li was stunned.

Behind the black cat, there was a dry corpse in a sitting position!

The bone structure of the corpse was extremely big and majestic. It did not have a frightening aura, but rather gave off a sense of loftiness, like a towering mountain that pierced the mortal realm, having seen everything there was to offer, and such that life was but a dream.

The dry corpse cupped an opaque stone with floral engravings. The

stone did not look particularly special.

“What type of man is this?” Jiang Li was cautious and did not dare move brashly.

Sewer! Black cat! Dry Corpse! Opaque stone!

The four objects formed a bizarre scene. Jiang Li thought maybe he was dreaming.

The black cat's green eyes met Jiang Li's stare. Having perceived no threat, it turned around and jumped to paw the opaque stone on the big dry corpse.

A strange thing happened.

Pia!

Before the cat's claws even met the opaque stone, its whole body fell straight down to the floor as if tranquilized by some power.

Zzzzzzz... The black cat did not encounter any danger, but instead started to snore.

The opaque stone seems to possess a mysterious power that hypnotizes things without direct contact.

Jiang Li starts to postulate. “What could that thing be? The black cat got hypnotized... But it looks like there's no danger.”

Observing carefully, Jiang Li discovered that the sleeping black cat had very calm life signs, almost undetectable. In the end breathing completely stopped, but bodily tissue and fur faintly moved, as if in cellular respiration, entering a vegetative state.

“This is... Fetal Respiration! How is this possible?” Jiang Li was shocked beyond words. He was not wrong. This was indeed fetal respiration, a marvelous type of innate respiration that strengthened cells and excavated potential. But such a legendary state had been reached by a cat?

The black cat was very powerful, with a speed that is almost unbelievable. It seemed all this was due to reaching the state of Fetal Respiration, with transformed internal secretions that had strengthened its bodily cells. It was as good as guaranteed that this was the work of the opaque stone.

“My god, to think this white stone could make a cat enter Fetal Respiration!” Jiang Li’s heart was thumping out of his chest; this was truly extraordinary.

Tatata... Taking one step at a time, Jiang Li walked towards the opaque stone to see if he will also be hypnotized.

Sure enough, before he even got close, he felt his eyelids twitching and an immense drowsiness reach his head, blurring his vision. He felt so tired, as if he was a person who had been awake for three days and three nights with his eyes open, having finally seen a bed. Even if it was the apocalypse, sleeping mattered more than anything else.

"No! You can't sleep now, grab the opaque stone first." Jiang Li bit his tongue, using pain to stimulate his conscience. His body continued moving forward, and his fingers touched the stone.

Boom!

Finally, at the exact moment his fingers came in contact with the opaque stone, drowsiness overwhelmed his entire mind. Unable to cope any longer he slumped down and entered the deepest form of sleep, forgetting himself, forgetting state and forgetting the world. Never had he been in such a wonderful sleep

"Dream of many millenniums, what era is this dusk?"

In his sleep, Jiang Li seemed to be dreaming, and heard a voice that faintly sighed.

Chapter 4 - Dream of how many Milleniums?

Jiang Li had a dream. In it he arrived deep into a strange dimension, where there were falling petals that were scattered around like snowflakes and blooming flowers. A big man dressed in white sat under a tree, holding the same expression as that of the dry corpse – it was almost like sadness yet was also like happiness.

A message was broadcasted into Jiang Li's mind.

"Otherworldly Demons have invaded our world. We tried to fight back, but we were no match for them. Carrying with me the dear and treasured [Great Dream Heart Sutra], I escaped the conflict and arrived at this location having expended all my life force. I passed away waiting for a kindred spirit. The [Great Dream Heart Sutra] was the most prized cultivation technique of our world, and must not fall into the hands of the Otherworldly Demons... Whoever shall become the successor of the [Great Dream Heart Sutra] must slay all the Otherworldly Demons to save my world."

The dream realm completely changed and became a vast continent that had never been foreseen before. The mountains and rivers were big, with countless geographical features. In this continent everyone learnt martial arts, but there seemed to be no technological progress, almost like ancient times.

Within the people there were individuals with unbelievable life forces, capable of upheaving rivers and oceans, able to influence the running of the natural world.

Suddenly it was as if the sky split open, and the whole continent was under attack. Gigantic warships arrived one by one, and armored personnel descended upon the continent, pillaging and plundering the whole continent. Of course they were met with great resistance by the elite martial artists of this world. The war continued. There were deaths of local martial artists but also warships that got ruptured...

It seemed that these armored personnel were the Otherworldly Demons described by the man in white.

"Wait... That's our warship?"

Jiang Li thought these Otherworldly Demons' looked a bit familiar, especially the logo on the gigantic warships - a blue planet which symbolized a battleship of mankind.

"I understand now... We were the Otherworldly Demons that attacked your world. You escaped but somehow ended up on Earth." Jiang Li was a bit stupefied.

Two hundred years ago, in 2050, a gigantic spacecraft landed on Earth.

Countries initiated World War Three in order to acquire this spacecraft.

The war was brutal, but made mankind unite together, with the government heads of different countries banding together to form a new sovereign state.

The united mankind stepped into a new era.

In the first century of the new era, technological progress advanced at a phenomenal rate due to researching the fallen spacecraft. Everyone's life force received great promotion.

In the second century, wormhole technology was discovered, and man started exploring extraterrestrial planets, finding great abundances of resources, and even made bases on other planets.

Having entered the Galactic Era with wormhole technology, mankind started to conquer other planets to take resources, and invaded this realm.

The man in white did not want the [Great Dream Heart Sutra] to be taken away, and used a mysterious power to shunt away, only to come here at this precise location and pass away. And now as a member of the Otherworldly Demons' Jiang Li would receive his inheritance.

The man probably hadn't been here for a long time; otherwise he might have been discovered by other people.

This was a secret of the higher-ups. Once discovered, it would cause great societal ripples for interstellar wars were being kept between the powerful individuals of the elite district. Normal people would never grasp the essence of what was happening.

"Destined person, the role of exterminating the Otherworldly Demons has befallen to you. The [Great Dream Heart Sutra] contains supreme principles that will give you the power to fight back against the Otherworldly Demons after cultivating it... Heed this, as the successor of the [Great Dream Heart Sutra], you must kill the Otherworldly Demons!

Otherwise you will be damned, and suffer for eternity!”

Ping!

The thought manifestation of the man ended up exploding, and Jiang Li was shocked awake from his dream.

He was still lying on the ground of the wet and humid sewers, his clothes covered in filth. But he felt that he gained great benefits from sleeping for his whole body was bursting with energy.

“Ah yep. Just then I also entered the state of Fetal Respiration.”

Jiang Li mimed a few punches, and felt that even if there were a few tigers in front of him he could easily kill them with one punch.

Hong!

The dry corpse went up in flames, and ended up bursting into a rainbow before disappearing. The opaque stone was now in Jiang Li’s hands.

“Rainbow Dissolution?”

Having seen the dry corpse become a rainbow, Jiang Li was flabbergasted. He never thought he would be able to observe such as marvel.

It was said that in ancient times, when monks had cultivated their heart and soul to immense heights, their whole body would flame up to become a rainbow and disappear without a trace. This phenomenon was called 'Rainbow Dissolution'.

In regards to this anomaly, countless scholars and martial artists of the Galactic Era had studied it, and it was said that once your heart and soul had become pure to an unprecedented state, your bodily 'frequency' would converge with that of universal powers, and form a resonance. The person would flame up into a rainbow, and enter a state of transcendence.

"Good thing the dry corpse disappeared, otherwise I'd have to find a way to bury the corpse. For if it were to be discovered by others the whole family would be subject to strict scrutiny!"

Having seen the corpse become a rainbow and finally disappear, Jiang Li let out a sigh of relief.

The black cat and kitten were still sleeping, but Jiang Li didn't wake them up. Fetal Respiration was very beneficial, and over a period of time the kitten would become as strong as the black cat.

"Let's see what the [Great Dream Heart Sutra] actually is."

Having met such a fortuitous encounter, Jiang Li did not leave, and used the light of his phone to examine the opaque stone. But he couldn't find anything that indicated this stone was special.

"I guess I can only go home to see if it has any special use." Jiang Li examined the stone for ages but did not come to any conclusions, and decided it was best to just tuck it somewhere close for now.

He needed to take a bath urgently.

At night, whilst lying on his bed, Jiang Li was extremely excited and fondled the stone. This was probably the [Great Dream Heart Sutra] described by the man in the dream.

Recounting the details, Jiang Li only understood that the man's planet had been conquered by the warships of Earth, and that he escaped with the [Great Dream Heart Sutra] to Earth. He knew nothing else. In regards to this opaque stone, the details of cultivation were beyond his grasp.

"Perhaps by Blood Contract?"

Jiang Li opened a small wound on his pinky and put his hand over the stone, but it didn't work. The opaque stone did not absorb any blood, just like a normal stone. Nothing happened.

Jiang Li examined the stone for a while, and was fruitless. He yawned and felt the urge to sleep.

"It can't be that I must eat it?" Having washed the stone clean, Jiang Li had the sudden thought, and so he tapped the stone with his tongue, and attempted to bite it to see if it was edible.

Little did he know, as soon as he put the stone in his mouth, the

hypnotic effect was once again activated, and he fell asleep, entering the state of Fetal Respiration once more.

His breathing was very natural, like a wind chime. It ended up being completely silent, with Jiang Li in a state of fake death.

If observed closely, you would discover that Jiang Li's bodily cells were moving around, full of vitality. All kinds of internal secretions were working together. This was the secret of Fetal Respiration.

The state of Fetal Respiration meant that the internal secretions work together to forge a flawless body; making the figure more perfect, the bones more dense, and the muscle fibers more sturdy. At the same time every cell was breathing in and out, absorbing nutrients in the air that would assist in strengthening them.

Ha...

Finally, Jiang Li woke up from his sleep, and felt full of vitality. It was the morning of the next day. He spat out the opaque stone and examined it once again, but still could not find anything special.

Having calmed down his restlessness, Jiang Li observed the changes to his body. His mind could concentrate much more easily, and he could feel his breathing, heartbeat and pulse... He could also observe inwardly and see faintly the condition of his organs.

Dong dong dong... His heart and pulse throbbed soothingly with strength. This was the sign of powerful life force.

He immediately jumped out of bed and threw a punch: contracted muscle, straight back, twisting motion, leg propulsion. It was the [Returning Tiger] of the ancient martial techniques.

Sssssss!

His punch pierced the air and made the sound of wind, as if it could rip the very atmosphere apart.

Two huffs later Jiang Li was surprised.

"Since when have my fists become this powerful? Strong enough to create air ripples? Could it be that my life force has reached 0.8?"

Only with a life force of 0.8 could punches be this powerful.

Though the change from a life force of 0.7 to 0.8 may look small, it represented a huge jump in physical capability.

This change could only be achieved by the step by step progression of arduous cultivation, sufficient nourishment and innate talent. In his high school of more than 800,000 students, only 10,000 possess a life force of 0.8. They would either be very talented or come from wealthy family backgrounds. There were less than 100 people with his brother, Jiang Tao's, life force of 0.9.

Throughout the school there were only a few people with a life force of 1.

Something countless students had yearned for day and night was achieved by Jiang Li over just one night of sleeping?

Jiang Li couldn't even believe himself, as if this was a dream.

He started to contemplate, specifically [Crystal Contemplation].

As soon as he started [Crystal Contemplatio] he entered the trance of Deep Sleep. He felt like he was a shard of scintillating crystal, shining brightly.

"I can even enter Deep Sleep at will! The improvement is huge! This is the second stage of Deep Sleep!"

For the three stages of Deep Sleep, Zhang Yue was the best in the class, yet he was only at the first stage, and must contemplate hours with the help of incense to be able to do it.

But now Jiang Li had completely skipped the contemplation step, and was able to enter Deep Sleep at will. This was a huge and unprecedented breakthrough in terms of heart and spirit cultivation. This must be credited towards the opaque stone.

"If this stone can make me enter Fetal Respiration, I wonder if it will work on other family members since the black cat could use it right?"

Jiang Li rushed to the park and brought the black cat home. He tried to

make the cat hold the stone in its mouth, but there were no hypnotism. It appeared the stone could only be used by him. It must've recognized Jiang Li as the rightful owner.

It was likely that Jiang Li became its master when the dry corpse sent the pieces of memory across...

The reason why the black cat did not gain the inheritance might be due to the fact that it was an animal, and the dry corpse could not let a cat become his successor.

This thing was most definitely a treasure, and must not be exposed so as to not contract the risk of a genocide. From hence onwards, Jiang Li would be much more cautious.

In the following days, Jiang Li commenced his arduous training.

In the morning he went to class as usual. At night he would sleep with the stone in his mouth and enter the state of Fetal Respiration with ease. With cellular respiration and internal secretions that improved his body, Jiang Li's inner potentials had become largely excavated.

Jiang Li would naturally wake up full of energy once Fetal Respiration had replenished his mind and spirit. He would then quietly get out of the house and hide in a secluded area of the park to practice martial arts and train himself physically.

In a span of 10 days, Jiang Li felt that his body had undergone tremendous change. His follicles had become refined, his muscles sturdy

and thick, his veins as tough and pliable as ox hide, and his bones dense and flawless. Demanding physical exercises he couldn't do before could now be done with ease. His power and running speed had also improved.

Timing himself secretly, he found that he could sprint 100 meters in 7 seconds.

It merely took 10 days for this unworldly transformation to take place, even in the absence of sufficient nutrients. Imagine if he had Sha Luo meat to eat every day. His potential would be excavated even more, and catching up to his brother Jiang Tao would no longer be a pipe dream.

Chapter 5 - Boneless Jujitsu

Jiang Li was still feeding the cats in the park at night. He could even feel the movement of the insects deep in the bush if he concentrated.

Buzzzzzzzzzz.

The mosquitoes flapped their wings.

The beetles extracted juice from the soft grass.

The cooties crawled about under the hairs of the homeless cats.

These scenes were all detected by his senses.

His brain was even able to reflect some images of the mice crawling in the underground sewerages...

This was only achievable when the mind was clear and free of thoughts.

His own spiritual training had also reached Deep Sleep stage two. This was outstanding even in the entire school. However, Jiang Li was still far from the third stage.

One must not move and must be perfectly silent in Deep Sleep. The

slightest movements of the body would result in waking up. He felt that the the third stage of Deep Sleep, going into Deep Sleep while exercising, was just simply impossible.

“Looks like it possibly won’t be long until my life force reaches 0.9.”

Jiang Li felt himself improving rapidly but he wanted to improve faster. It was only a little more than a term until the final graduation exam. He wanted to amaze everyone after a semester by entering Astral University.

Cultivation was a step by step process. Even if he could use the opaque stone to enter the state of Fetal Respiration, it was still a gradual process of improving his constitution and strengthening his spirit.

This wasn’t the genetic engineering in tales where a weak person could be transformed into someone with the strength of ten elephants and the agility of birds in an instant.

Furthermore, methods of genetic manipulation, genetic potions were still one of humanity’s most confidential secrets at that stage and could only be found in the elite district.

Human genetics was the greatest arcanum of science. Of course, these things came with great risks. Genetic transformation had an extremely high fatality rate. Some people even turned into half human half animal monsters. They lost their sense and went berserk killing people.

Now, Jiang Li’s life force was still 0.8. However, after long periods of body enhancement in the

Fetal Respiration state, his body's flexibility and durability had increased dramatically. He could now begin practising some high difficulty martial arts.

Heng! Ha! Huo! He!

Nighttime and dawn was when countless people were deep asleep. At an obscured place in the park, Jiang Li was practising his fists and training his body. He practiced the ancient fighting techniques he learnt at school for revision. His posture and moves were smooth like water.

He wiped some sweat and sat in meditation. The opaque stone was in his mouth and soon he successfully entered the state of Fetal Respiration. Indistinctly, he could feel the cells in his body squirming as if avariciously breathing the oxygen in the air.

Another hour had passed and he woke up automatically. He checked his body. All the bruises he attained during training had all disappeared. He couldn't help but to smile as his spirit and stamina all reached the peak

"Very well, I have completely mastered all the class content I have learnt so far. The next step is to learn some high complexity things." He took an electronic book from his bag and pressed some buttons. Immediately, a holographic person appeared. This image performed all sorts of high difficulty movements. Sometimes, his bones were entwined, sometimes, he attacked explosively. These maneuvers were so hard that they were impossible for normal people to do.

Students nowadays all used electronic books for study. The virtual humans and three-dimensional projections were so vivid that it was

almost as if there was a teacher teaching on the spot.

This was a C rank martial art called [Boneless Jujitsu].

It had many peculiar movements such as twisting the body together like a snake and twisting the neck 180 degrees. It was a high difficulty martial art learned in the stamina class of school.

This was created a long time ago by the cultivation experts in the military. They combined the ancient art of yoga, wushu, and boxing to create this.

What Jiang Li had learnt so far were mainly boxing moves. These were D rank martial arts.

Martial arts were ranked as D, C, B, A, S, SS.

D rank martial arts were the foundational martial arts. They had high practicality and immense offensive power.

C rank martial arts, however, brought the standards up quite significantly. They started to deal with the secrets of the bones, chakra pathways and organs.

As for B rank martial arts, they were the synthesis of the spiritual and physical. Every move was combined with contemplation methods. They were highly classified in the military.

[ED Note: So with every move they are in the state of Contemplation such as Crystal Contemplation.]

[Boneless Jujitsu] did not belong to his current syllabus. For example, currently, he was a primary school student learning his addition, subtraction, multiplication and division. Compared to that, [Boneless Jujitsu] was calculus.

A primary school student who just learned his basic operations of math began studying calculus. This was the acts of geniuses.

Studying [Boneless Jujitsu] by himself was actually very dangerous. Doing those dangerous, high difficulty movements without guidance could easily result in bone fracture and even whole body paralysis.

Originally, he could have chosen some hard D rank martial arts such as [Capture and Brawl Art] or [Military Exploding Fist Thrust] to learn. Although they required large amounts of maneuvering, they were fundamentally different compared with [Boneless Jujitsu].

The reason he had this big leap was very explicit. It was to use up every ounce of his strength and boil every bit of his stamina and then proceed to recovery in the Fetal Respiration state.

This was because he discovered that the more exhausted he was when he entered Fetal Respiration, the more he benefitted.

“When I have learnt [Boneless Jujitsu], I will be glorious.”

"[Boneless Jujitsu] first move, [Twisting Bone Attack]!"

The holographic image projected from the electronic book performed slow movements. The whole person twisted and the bones and muscles inside the body started to twisted as well. The whole person was like a rope, twisting and entwining. Like a roly-poly, it made all sorts of movements.

The difficulty of these type of movements were too high. It was as though the person really had no bones.

Or, it could be said that the bones and muscles were elastic steel ropes wound together, storing huge amounts of energy and then releasing it in that instantaneous moment of time similar to a bullet flying out of a gun barrel.

Crack...crack....

Jiang Li only mimicked the first movement and immediately felt dizzy. All the bones felt like they were going to break and the muscles felt like they were tearing apart. He fell onto the ground in a thud before even finishing the move. There were stars flying about his eyes as he heavily gasped for breaths. Like a fish that left the water, he couldn't really move at all.

With his strong determination, he crawled up again and sat straight. He started resting with the opaque stone in his mouth.

Sure enough, he entered Fetal Respiration rapidly once again.

This time, he stayed in that state for a very long. It lasted for a full two hours. He woke once again and to his surprise, he found himself to have fully recovered. His Qi also seemed to have grown stronger.

First time, he fell down completely exhausted with bone damage and torn muscles. He went into Fetal Respiration and recovered. Second time, third time, fourth time.....

It was five whole days of time and Jiang Li finally learnt the first move of the [Boneless Jujitsu], the [Twisting Bone Attack].

His bone structure and muscle tendons became much more compact and he entered into Fetal Respiration more and more frequently. It appeared that exhausting his stamina was helpful in activating the opaque stone's functions.

In actual fact, Jiang Li desperately wanted to know what the opaque stone and the [Great Dream Heart Sutra] contained. It couldn't be as simple as allowing people to enter Fetal Respiration. Since it was called [Great Dream Heart Sutra] it had to contain unimaginable capabilities. Unfortunately, Jiang Li didn't know how to open it.

He had been researching it constantly these few days but had not come up with any findings.

The good thing was, the more frequently he entered Fetal Respiration, the more beneficial it was to his body.

Next, he started to learn the other moves of the [Boneless Jujitsu], the [Projecting Bone Stab]

This was a very powerful offensive mean. The bones around the whole body were constantly like arrows, empowering the body like a projectile, stabbing into the weak points of the opponent's body. This type of martial arts could actually allow a person's bones and muscles to separate at anytime. For example, when the person reaches out for a grab, the length of the arm could extend a few inches. This was the effect of separating bones.

He spent another three days to become proficient at it.

Subsequently, it was [Shattering Bone Collapsing the Clouds]. This move was even more ferocious; the bone appeared as if it had cracked open and shattered. Every stab attack was tremendous like the attack of a canon. This had an even higher requirement for bone pliability.

As for the latter moves such as the [Boulder Breaking Bone Shatter] and the [Boneless Dragon Snake Dance], it could only barely be practiced by those with a life force of 1.

Jiang Li did an approximation. His life force currently was between 0.85 and 0.9.

In the morning a month later, the moonlight was like water and Jiang Li was in the park practicing. Once, twice, three times.....He practiced for more than ten times. His whole body was sweating

and his bones were under immense pain. Some parts were seemingly about to break

open.

If other people saw this, their eyes would be wide open in astonishment because even students with a life force of 0.9 would not have the stamina to practice the first three moves of the [Boneless Jujitsu] more than ten times without resting. They could only practice three to five times before their bones would not be able to handle it anymore. At least three days of rest would be required before they start practicing once again.

Breathe in and out.....Jiang Li endured the pain and sat down. Ten minutes later, he successfully entered the state of illusory death in Fetal Respiration.

TL Note: 假死/illusory death: a state in which the body does not breathe but is not actually dead. Thus, the person is considered to be hypothetical state of death.

This time, after five whole hours, he was able to stand up full spirited. There were no pains at all in his body. He was full of stamina and clear minded. All of his energy had been replenished and he was at his zenith.

Thus, he began to read and study. A bag full of books contained all sorts of math, chemistry, physics, biology, history, geography and so forth. When he read, he scanned through ten lines with a glance and memorized it clearly in his brain.

These literary studies were also counted in the calculation of life force. Knowledge was a part of life force.

His mental processes were acute and many problems that were hard for him normally came easy like a breeze after recovering in Fetal Respiration. He remembered everything with a scan of his eyes. Any

question or knowledge was deeply ingrained in his brain after reading it once. He comprehended it and it became his knowledge.

A night had passed, and as soon as the morning sun rose in the east, Jiang Li stopped reading to cultivate before entering Fetal Respiration to recover.

In less than ten minutes, he was rejuvenated once again. He looked nothing like a person who pulled an all nighter.

He took out cat food from his bag to feed the homeless cats. The big black cat had become really intimate with him and always circled around him. Unfortunately, he had to study otherwise it would have been very interesting to have it around.

"Big Black, Flower face, Big Meng, Second Meng, Third Meng, Fourth Meng, Fifth Meng. You guys need to behave. If a homeless dog confronts you guys, let Big Black deal with it first, you guys shouldn't charge in. Understand?"

He patted the kitty's heads one by one. This group of homeless cats always encountered homeless dogs and suffers in fights. But Big Black wasn't afraid. He was strong and could protect the whole group.

Those few small baby cats' names were Big meng, Second Meng..... They were named by Jiang Li. The cats didn't want Jiang Li to go so they bit onto his trousers and ran around on the ground.

Big Meng even climbed onto Jiang Li's shoulder and licked everywhere

with its tongue.

The big black cat “Big Black” marched over with its heads up and chest out. It roared and the playful baby cats walked back obediently to their home in the park to sleep. It was the home Jiang Li built for them.

The park was big and the cat homes were deep in the nests so no one interfered.

“Pitty you guys can’t understand humans. If only I could teach you guys [Crystal Contemplation].”

Jiang Li patted Big Black.

According to the theory of cultivation, the spirits of animals were hundreds of times more pure than the spirit of humans.

Thus, they were well suited to cultivate all sorts of contemplation methods. However, it was very hard for them to open their intelligence and thus they did not understand what cultivation was.

However, in the ancient times, some eminent monks were able to open the intelligence for animals allowing them to have the intellect of humans. These animals included monkeys, cats, foxes and so forth. As soon as the animals developed intelligence and cultivated contemplation methods, their progress was immensely rapid! In the ancient times, some foxes even hypnotized humans, causing many incidents.

According to modern research, those incidents in the ancient times occurred when animals developed intelligence and cultivated spiritually. They were able to hypnotise people and induce them hallucinations.

The elite district already had a research project to allow animals to cultivate. It was called the "Monster Plan"

Jiang Li really wanted these homeless cats to be able to cultivate. This would allow them to have intelligence so that they could survive better.

After feeding the cats, he had to go to school for class .

"Big Black, good bye!" Jiang Li waved his hand.

Big Black also waved his cat claws like a human.

"This feels nice, school, here I come."

On the way to school, Jiang Li felt a ball of fire burning in his chest.

Before, he had the feeling of avoiding school. Now that there was hope, the atmosphere in the school felt very youthful and hot blooded to him. It was suitable for hard work. The ideal of entering Astral University came back once again.

In one month's time, his power had increased significantly. Although he didn't rise to the skies in one step, there was still some gap between him and the top people in the school, the most important thing was that he

had found his confidence.

He could increase this much in the short period of a month and this was when he did not have any resources. If he had resources, he believed he would rise to the apex.

The resources in the house were for little brother and they weren't plenty. If he wanted resources, he had to think of ways himself. He didn't want to increase the burden for his parents. He would earn money for himself!

Chapter 6 - Test of Ability

One could also earn money as a student.

The school already had connections with outside and students could do some part time jobs such as house chores, cleaning school grounds and cleaning the mansions of the wealthy people. As for the top students, they could even help the police with investigations and participate in military activities.

The high school students nowadays weren't the caged parrots they were two hundred years ago. They were very capable.

Students with a life force of 0.9 could assist the army and earn high salaries.

The mass and general public had a life force of 0.7.

Those with a life force of 0.8 could join the police or even become a normal soldier.

Those with a life force of 0.9 could become military instructors.

As for those with a life force of 1, they were the highly influential people. This was not only the case inside school. They could also acquire high status even outside of school.

The students before relied on marks and grades. Those were useless. No matter how high your scores were, no one cared about you when you entered society. Now, the grades were the solid and practical life force. This was power. This was the foundation of humanity.

“What job would be better? Private tutor salaries are too low. I need to go see what jobs have high salaries. Little brother was even helping police with crime investigations a year ago and helped them arrest a dangerous figure. For his contribution, he was rewarded with a few hundred star coins.” Jiang Li was thinking.

“Hey! You came this early for school Jiang Li? This isn’t you at all.”

As soon as Jiang Li walked onto the large field of the school, a tall and stout figured student ran towards him. His height was 1.85m and had a bulky figure. He had a smirk on his face and suddenly accelerated. He used the move [Old Bear Ramming Tree] and rammed towards Jiang Li with explosive power like a swirling wind.

This was his classmate Tiger Ma. He had a life force of 0.8 and loved mischief.

Not long ago, Jiang Li was rammed over by Tiger Ma a few times and Tiger Ma laughed at him, mocking Jiang Li for being weak.

Tiger Ma was very disliked in class especially by normal students like Jiang Li who was always bullied by him.

A person with a life force of 0.8 could easily beat 3 to 5 people with a

life force of 0.7 in a fight. Maybe even six or seven. This was a fundamental difference in power.

Hmph!

Jiang Li snorted and bent his torso. His body swayed like a willow tree branch in the wind and easily side stepped the ram. Finally, his whole body including his spine suddenly twisted as with his muscles. His whole body was tense like a twisted steel rope!

[Boneless Jujitsu], [Twisting Bone Attack]!

His whole body smashed into Tiger Ma.

Bang!

Tiger Ma was like a person rammed over by a car and flew back falling on the runway heavily. He was dazed and bruises all over his face. Finally, he collected himself.

“[Boneless Jujitsu, Twisting Bone Attack]? How can a worthless crap like you with a life force of 0.7 do such high difficulty moves?”

He was shocked.

[Boneless Jujitsu] was a C rank martial art in the school and belonged to the self study course. Although everyone could study it, it was very high in difficulty and had high requirements for bone pliability, muscle

elasticity and tendon strength. If you learnt it forcefully, the only consequence would be bone fracture and whole body paralysis.

Just then, the move [Twisting Bone Attack] entwined all the bones in the body together to suddenly release elastic energy. The speed was rapid, the power was great and the angle was unexpected making it hard for people to defend against.

It was already very hard to learn these types of moves. To use it in an actual battle was even harder.

"Tiger Ma, stop trying to play jokes on me again. Remember it. Otherwise, I'll beat you every time you try." Jiang Li didn't even explain. The feeling of being proud and elated was magnificent: "I don't need to explain to you how I learnt this."

He didn't mind using his fists to teach a lesson to those who picked on weak students.

After finishing his sentence, he turned to leave immediately not even giving Tiger Ma a chance to ask.

"Damn it!" Tiger Ma smashed his fist onto the runway. He was angry and stared glaringly at Jiang Li's back: "Just you wait."

Jiang Li didn't worry about Tiger Ma's revenge. Little fights in the school were normal and although Tiger Ma's family was wealthy, they didn't have too much power. The most he could do was to gather a group and look for trouble. With his current skills, he could take on a few

people.

"Bro, you're good. Even Tiger Ma was beaten to the ground by you."

As soon as he entered the class, Guo Meng came and patted Jiang Li on the back:" That guy always bullied us because his life force was strong. This time, he stepped on a hard nail. How did you improve so much, did you go into Deep Sleep?"

"Guo Meng, this time I got you your revenge."

Jiang Li saw that it was Guo Meng. They were brothers in hardship. Once, they were training in the gymnasium and Tiger Ma used the excuse of giving them pointers and beat them up one versus two.

"I feel like I have some breath through recently."

Of course he couldn't talk about Fetal Respiration. That was too absurd.

"Can you really enter Deep Sleep?" Guo Meng admired and then sighed, "Too bad I still can't. Sigh! You have a successful life ahead of you. You can find a goob job and get in a good university graduating with a life force of 0.8." Guo Meng sighed, "But your little brother is even stronger. Ten days ago, he came into conflict with Zheng Wenbing and was able to beat him."

"Huh?" Jiang Li listened, "Why? What happened between them?"

In the recent month, he was cultivating every day. He was so focused that he was immersed in his inner world and even skipped some unimportant classes. Separated from the outside world, he trained day and night in Fetal Respiration and was even unaware of what happened in his family.

Zheng Wenbing was an influential person in the school. His life force was 0.9 and had a very big family background with over 10 million star coins worth of assets.

Yet, Jiang Li's family only had about 10 thousand star coins even after all these years of savings.

"My God, you still don't know?" Guo Meng patted his forehead, "This is one of the biggest news in the school, they're fighting over courting Yelani Lu."

"Yelani Lu?"

Jiang Li remembered, Yelani Lu, Lara Han, Ling Xue, Sarah Yun were labeled the four goddesses of the school. The number of people pursuing them was uncountable.

It seemed like little brother Jiang Tao liked Yelani Lu and was willing to start a feud with rich kids like Zheng Wenbing.

"Zheng Wenbing is someone strong. My little brother can defeat him?"

"Zheng Wenbing is only strong because he is stacked up by resources. I

heard he eats Shui Lian Fruit, Moon Noodles..... for breakfast. Each meal is worth more than a hundred star coins. His set daily diet costs 500 star coins. Yet, how much do we spend on food combined? A few star coins and we are fed really well." Guo Meng praised in admiration, "That day, Yelani Lu seemed to be on a date with your brother at the movies. Haha, your brother hooked a goddess. I don't even know how many people are jealous."

He also imagined himself pursuing a goddess.

"But Zheng Wenbing can take revenge on you if you get into conflict with him."

Jiang Li thought, "Better find a time to ask little brother and see what's going on."

After talking with "brothers in hardship" for a while, the class bell rung.

Stamina class began.

"Let's go bro." Guo Meng laughed, "Today is stamina class. We're in year 12 and there will be a new professor in ancient martial arts. I wonder what we're learning today?"

"No matter what we are going to learn, I will be able to master it!" Jiang Li thought in his heart. There was a strong surge of confidence between his eyes.

The big gymnasium had 5000 square meters of land with substantial

amount of training equipments, sprinting testing machines, punching machines, silicon dummies..... and a large pact of flat ground. At this moment, the 4000 people in Jiang Li's class all gathered here for stamina training.

The stamina teacher appeared.

It wasn't Miss Blade, Miss Blade was a spiritual class teacher specialised in teaching spiritual training.

The teacher was a middle aged man with a height of 1.87m. He wasn't bulky and wore large white clothes. He appeared languid in manner and folded his arms as if chilling in a spa. However, occasionally, his eyes glimmered giving people a sense of lightning piercing through the night sky.

"Silence, silence....." some students spoken in a small voice, "Lazy Long is here."

The teacher for Jiang Li's stamina class had a nickname "Lazy Long". The students came up with it as he appeared to be lazy on the outside but on the inside, he was a dragon. His fierce claws and teeth were concealed in the deep.

"Don't make Lazy Long angry! He also has another identity and that is a military instructor. The school hired him with a high salary to be our teacher."

"He takes double the salary."

"I wonder what ancient martial arts he's going to teach us today? I head Lazy Long had expertise in countless forms of ancient martial arts."

"We're year 12 now, we should be taught some powerful martial arts."

"There are powerful martial arts that we can learn ourselves now. The electronic tutorials are exactly the same as the teacher teaching us. But can we learn it? For example C rank martial arts....."

Cough!

The middle aged teacher Lazy Long walked in front of the students and scanned the mass. Immediately, silence prevailed. His eyesight looked through the four thousand or so people: "This class only has one person in Deep Sleep? Who is it? Stand out."

"Sir! It's me. I am the class captain Zhang Yue."

Zhang Yue proudly walked in front, "My Life Force grade is 0.9, I am open for advice."

"Very well."

Lazy Long suddenly threw a fist out.

The arm grew in size rapidly with this punch making cracking sounds as the joints rubbed against each other. The bones realigned and the whole

hand suddenly became much bigger.

Zhang Yue was shocked and hurriedly dodged maneuvering his foot. However, Lazy Long's fist was constantly transforming and it aimed for every inch of Zhang Yue's body. The punches followed Zhang Yue closely not giving him any chance to catch his breath.

Pew!

His body inflated and then spewed a gust of breath out, his fist changed into palms and cut many curves in the air that clashed with Lazy Long's forearm.

D rank martial art, [Parabolic Hand Blade]!

Stud stud stud.....

He fell back many steps yet Lazy Long stood completely still.

This showed the distinct difference in strength. Lazy Long's power was extremely strong and a cold shiver went down Jiang Li's back as he spectated.

"Good!" Lazy Long stopped and nodded in approval, "Zhang Yue, your battle sense is good, your spirit is strong, your senses are sensitive and your reactions are swift. Today, what I will be teach you is the C rank martial art [Dragon Claw Subjugation]. This martial art was created by Wang Chao for the military two hundred years ago during the sovereign era. He was the grandmaster and the king of martial artists. He was the

king of physical capabilities during that age. I speculate that in the entire class, only you can learn it. No one else can."

Chapter 7 - Dragon Claw Subjugation

"To think it would be created by the Martial Arts Emperor, the King of Stamina, Grandmaster Wang Chao. This must be a very powerful martial technique!"

"But I'm a bit skeptical about the rumours surrounding Wang Chao. Two hundred years ago Earth was still divided up by countries, and resources were scarce. Things like AIDS or cancer could not even be conquered. This primitive society could give birth to a man of such caliber? But official statistics state that Wang Chaos tested his life force during his apex during 2050. It was when he was 70, and adjusted for current standards it was about 9? That's insane. Are they sure it wasn't a cyborg?"

"Peak life force at 70? Back then 70 year old people were probably near their deathbeds. I think the officials are exaggerating. No matter how strong people in ancient times were, there's no way they'd be match for modern humans."

"The average life force of people back then was about 0.4 to 0.5. Now it's 0.7, almost twice as strong as previously. But the people with a life force of 9 only reside in the Elite District. If my life force was 9, why would I even go Astral University? I'd go straight the Elite District and become a high official, a rank that is a hundred times more extravagant than that of the Xing Hua City Mayor."

"Fuck off, even if your life force was 0.9 you'd be successful."

"Don't talk so much, let me see the martial technique."

"C rank martial arts."

"Why? Just because only Zhang Yue can learn this, Lazy Long would give him private attention?"

"It can't be helped. I think he is the only one out of our class of 4000 with a life force of 0.9. In the whole year level of more than 50 classes, 200,000 students, he'd be ranked in the top 30. The school only cares about potential candidates for Astral University, and people like us are all abandoned..."

A few students talked quietly amongst themselves. They weren't happy, but could not do anything, for the gifted would naturally receive attention.

Lazy Long didn't care after hearing the mutters.

"I don't mind if you guys wanted to learn my [Dragon Claw Subjugation]. In fact you can come to me at any time to look at it. But this technique requires bone and muscle elasticity to be extremely high. If learnt brashly, you risk breaking bones and ligaments. This is an army martial technique, and every move is intended to kill, and so it's not part of the normal curriculum."

"Don't worry about them teacher. I will learn it studiously." Zhang Yue raised his head.

It was true that no one in the class could refute his qualifications in

learning this technique.

"Look!" Lazy Long suddenly thrust his hands out, and made a clawing motion in the air with his fingers. Nearby students jumped in fright after seeing his arms.

These definitely were not human arms; thick, strong, with blood vessels that were coiled around it like blue pythons. Muscles, similar to armored scales, covered their entirety. The arm was not of flesh and blood but rather metal and machine!

"Transfer qi onto your arms, and pivoting on your spine tense your 'scales'! The first move is [Blue Dragon Upsurge]!" Lazy Long shook up and down, his claws like the wind, and his feet like drifting clouds.

"Second move [Returning Black Dragon]!"

"Third move [Ball Play of the White Dragon]!"

"Fourth move [Fire Dragon Scorching the Plains]!"

"Fifth move [Probing Claws of the Sky Dragon]!"

The demonstrations were as fast as lightning. Both hands moved to subdue, with every move possessing killing intent, capable of dislodging bones and limbs. A few students were chilled by what they saw. If they were to meet such an opponent their only fate would be one - to be wrecked into pieces.

"As expected, the bone and muscle prerequisites are extremely high." Jiang Li watched on on the side. Having secretly learnt [Boneless JiuJitsu], his understanding of martial arts exceeded many people, and recognized [Dragon Claw Subjugation] as a brutal physical technique with swift and fierce attacks. It was even more vicious than [Boneless JiuJitsu].

But [Boneless JiuJitsu] was a type of 'JiuJitsu', which places emphasis on coordination. Though it was weaker than [Dragon Claw Subjugation] in terms of attacking power, it was a foundation technique, meaning as long as you've learnt it, mastering any other C ranked martial technique would be a walk in the park.

During Lazy Long's lecture Jiang Li secretly learnt the many ways of transferring qi in [Dragon Claw Subjugation]. Having [Boneless JiuJitsu] as his basis he almost immediately learnt the skills and attacks.

But he silently mulled over them and did not show that he had understood them.

The hour long class passed quickly.

After receiving one on one instructions from Lazy Long, Zhang Yue also learnt this ferocious C rank martial technique in a few hours. But his moves were raw and rough, and could not be used in a real battle.

"Zhang Yue, your talent and physical capabilities aren't bad, but [Dragon Claw Subjugation] shines the most in close quarter combat. I advise you to learn [Boneless JiuJitsu] for it is a foundation technique. Once learnt, any C rank martial technique can even be self-taught. Also,

you bones and muscles need to be strengthened more. Once you go home eat more supplements. If possible try get the 'Star Body Strengthening Pill', it will help a lot in your cultivation."

"Star Body Strengthening Pill, 2000 star coins per pill..." After hearing the name of the supplement Zhang Yue quivered, but ended up smiling, "I will most definitely train the C rank martial technique till perfection."

"Good! Today's class is nearly over, everyone train at your own pace." Lazy Long remarked nonchalantly, "Let's start one on one training to see where you're at."

[Dragon Claw Subjugation] could be performed by two people. One attempts to subdue whilst the other tries evade, forming connecting moves which became a technique set.

"Have you learnt much?" Jiang Li's best friend Guo Meng made a pact with him and each tried to overwhelm each other with [Dragon Claw Subjugation]. Guo Meng only learnt a basic move that lacked power whilst Jiang Li performed the technique naturally.

But of course, in an area of more than 4000 people training, no one would have noticed that Jiang Li understood the essence of the technique.

"Jiang Li."

Suddenly Zhang Yue, with insolence, treaded towards the pair.

"What's the problem, class captain?" Jiang Li wasn't worried. A month ago he would have felt crippling pressure facing Zhang Yue, but now that tension had lessened considerably due to his stronger body.

"I heard that even after warning you, you still met Lara at the Park? How ballsy indeed." Zhang Yue narrowed his eyes, "Do you dare not to listen to me?"

"Who are you?" Jiang Li fired back quizzically, "Why should I listen to you?"

"You-!" Zhang Yue was wide eyed at Jiang Li's response. In the same instance a cold sheen glazed his eyes. "Oh, you're strong now aye? If that's the case let's practice together. As the class captain I'll school you in close quarter combat to improve your grades.

"Big man class captain, let us be peaceful with our words." Guo Meng could sense the situation going out of control and tried to defuse the tension.

"Fuck off!"

Zhang Yue kicked out viciously. It was the D rank martial technique [Corkscrew Heart Punt].

As fast as a storm it struck Guo Meng's belly.

Guo Meng screamed and was sent flying a good two meters before crashing on the ground, holding his stomach writhing in pain.

"Oops sorry." Zhang Yue didn't look sorry, and instead wiped his leg as if it was dirtied by Guo Meng. "Fellow classmate, I'm trying to teach you, why are you not focusing?"

"Are you alright Guo Meng?" Jiang Li went over to help his friend up, but deep down he was furious.

"I'm ok." Guo Meng had cold sweat dripping off his forehead.

"Come here Jiang Li. I still haven't taught you close combat techniques yet." Zhang Yue walked towards Jiang Li then suddenly lashed out again.

This attack was even faster than the previous, creating ripples in the surrounding air.

D rank martial technique, [Knife Edge Kick]!

"Ahhhhhhhh!"

Nearby students closed their eyes, whilst some female students even started screaming.

The attack was ferocious, and if hit, serious injury would be imminent. But no one dared to stop it for Zhang Yue had made himself a bastardly reputation.

Pa!

A arm drew an oval in mid air, stopping the attack mid-way. It also made piercing sounds. It hit head on with Zhang Yue's leg.

Raw physical brawling always makes loud noises.

Zhang Yue leaped backwards, his eyes full of disbelief.

Jiang Li slowly stood up. "Do you really think you can do as you please in class?"

"You can stop my [Knife Edge Kick]?" Zhang Yue felt that Jiang Li had changed, but he still looked down on him. "I see, apparently you think with that amount of improvement in the past month you can boss me around now huh?"

"It's true I improved." Jiang Li stared Zhang Yue down, "You wanted to school me in close quarter combat right? Let's go then!"

"I'll make you eat dirt!" How could Zhang Yue restrain himself after feeling his authority being challenged?

Souuuuuu!

He leaped out and threw a punch that was like a bayonet, aiming straight for the opponent's heart.

D rank martial technique, [Exploding Army Thrust].

Every punch was diverted at the opponent's vitals, with footwork that could shatter even a wooden dummy. People with Zhang Yue's life force of 0.9 were considered to be martial experts 200 years ago.

Jiang Li focused his vision and concentrated his mind. The opponent's moves slowed down in his world. He raised his arm and suddenly jabbed out, claws gleaming, like a returning dragon.

It was in fact the [Returning Black Dragon] of the freshly learnt [Dragon Claw Subjugation] technique.

The long bone breaking claw struck with Zhang Yue's fists.

Ping....

There were continuous physical clashes. In just a few seconds the duo had traded more than 10 moves.

Stopping, there were visible bruises on Jiang Li's arms, as Zhang Yue's fists had a penetrative power which had viciously pommeled his arm.

But Zhang Yue wasn't better off. There were blood marks everywhere on his arm, with wounds seeping blood.

This was the result of Jiang Li's claws.

[Dragon Claw Subjugation] specialises in pulling out tendons and

severing meridians. It was even possible to instantly cut off major arteries of enemies in just one exchange, making them bleed to death.

No one gained the upperhand in the exchange; both were wounded.

“My battle experience is still lacking! Though Fetal Respiration can help with my body, the lack of nutrition means that it was watering a pot without plants. Without sufficient nutrients, cell growth is also limited.” Jiang Li originally thought he’d be able to beat Zhang Yue, but once he started fighting he could feel his lack of experience, missing good opportunities to strike back. If it wasn’t for the heightened senses that was brought by long term Fetal Respiration, he would have been a lot worse off.

This battle made him understand that though Fetal Respiration was marvelous, it still needed sufficient nourishment in order to strengthen cells.

Relying on the opaque stone to reach Fetal Respiration without nutrition cuts down the effectiveness by more than 90%. In comparison the masters that could enter Fetal Respiration, his version was a hoax; it was not the real deal,

Just like those that rely on Hypnotists to enter Deep Sleep, it was not due to an elevation in spiritual cultivation.

“In the future I shall continue to work hard, and earn money to buy supplements!” Jiang Li promised to himself, “The opaque stone only laid out the pathway for me to go. True success is still up to myself.”

Though Jiang Li did not win, the nearby students were shocked beyond words.

"Jiang Li can go toe to toe with Zhang Yue?"

"Dude Zhang Yue has a life force of 0.9. He's strong as, yet he merely fought on equal terms with Jiang Li? In our class there are many people with a life force of 0.8, yet even four or five of them could be easily crushed by Zhang Yue. Could it be that Jiang Li's life force has reached 0.9?"

"Fuaaaaaaaaaark, there's going to be a new king in town..."

"I wonder if they are still going to fight?"

The 4000 odd students of the class stopped their training and looked at the confrontation between Jiang Li and Zhang Yue.

"Ok." This time Lazy Long spoke and walked across the room, his eyes beaming. "Your battle stops here. You're Jiang Li right? A tiger in hiding? To think you could use the freshly taught [Dragon Claw Subjugation] technique to such proficiency... You've learnt [Boneless JiuJitsu] right?"

"

"Yes sir!" Jiang Li bowed, "I've learnt the first three moves, [Twisting Bone Attack], [Projecting Bone Stab] and [Shattering Bone Collapsing the Clouds]."

"Not bad, not bad indeed! Worthy of heavy excavation." Lazy Long cared not of the fighting incident, for he used to be a army officer, and in

the army brawls and fights were way more common. As long as there were students worthy of excavation it was all good. In addition this was a close combat class, why would there not be injuries?

[TL Note: (重点培养/heavy excavation) - (investment of resources, further development)]

"Have you achieved Deep Sleep in spirit cultivation?"

"Yes," Jiang Li admitted, "I can enter the second stage of Deep Sleep anywhere and anytime at will."

Once these words were spoken, there was great commotion.

"Wow! He's so good! He's like a genius."

"To think he could enter Deep Sleep at will, doesn't Zhang Yue require a long period of meditation every time..."

"His spirit cultivation is higher than that of Zhang Yue's."

"No wonder he caught up in such short time..."

"I don't believe it!" Though Zhang Yue realized Lazy Long had taken a liking to Jiang Li, and that he had no way of stopping it, he did not believe that Jiang Li could enter Deep Sleep at will.

Chapter 8 - Overdraw of Life

Jiang Li could indeed now enter Deep Sleep whenever he wanted.

In this month of training, he entered Fetal Respiration everyday which greatly boosted his physical capabilities and spiritual cultivation. Without the assistance of the opaque stone, he performed [Crystal Contemplation] and in that instance, his whole body felt pure like a crystal. His mind was at peace and almost immediately he entered Deep Sleep.

Compared to Fetal Respiration, Deep Sleep was a piece of cake.

Now when Jiang Li tries to Deep Sleep, it was almost as easy as doing primary school questions.

However, entering the third stage of Deep Sleep wasn't easy. That was the [Drunken Fist] stage. Every move had immense power and there was barely anyone who could enter this state. In the school there was no more than five.

"You two are injured,, go to the nursery and fix yourselves up."

Lazy Long looked at the bloodied Zhang Yue. Although the wounds looked scary, they were all minor injuries.

Nowadays, medical technology was very advance. There was bone and

cell regeneration technology. Just a small spray of medical fluid on the arm would heal all injuries in the matter of a few hours.

“Very well then.” Zhang Yue’s arm was torn and looked extremely painful but he didn’t even bat an eyelid. It was as if the arm wasn’t his. It showed his strong spiritual prowess. “Jiang Li, looks like you will be competing with me in class?”

“Compete with you? Zhang Yue, you’re not even worthy. In the following month, I will surpass you by miles!” Jiang Li also felt piercing pain in his arms. It was starting to swell as the bones had split. Although they were equally matched in this fight, he knew his battle experience was lacking.

However, being able to fight on par with Zhang Yue had made the class of 4000 students look at him in a different way and thus confirmed his status in the class.

This was what he wanted.

“Arrogant! You’re too arrogant!” Zhang Yue noticed Jiang Li’s forearm was swollen and his eyes immediately became sinister, “I fractured the bones in your forearm. In order to cure all that and not leave behind any sequelae, you need to have cell and bone regeneration technology. That treatment costs at least a hundred star coins. I’m sorry, the monthly salary of your parents are no more than that.”

Zheng Yue was blatantly bullying Jiang Li’s lack of money.

A hundred star coins was indeed a large amount for students.

"I will recover."

Jiang Li bowed to Lazy Long, "Sir, I'm going to get treatment first."

"Go ahead." Lazy Long watched the conflict indifferently and didn't interfere.

"Just you wait!" Zhang Yue eyes were cold and he sneered on the inside, "I won't let you off so easily."

Night time at home.

Jiang Li didn't go to the nursery for treatment. He obviously needed to recover but couldn't afford a hundred star coins.

But, he didn't need recovery treatment. Fetal Respiration was the best treatment.

"Looks like my battle experience is inadequate. My constitution is weaker than those children of wealthy families and I lack supplements." Jiang Li laid on his bed and thought, all the while massaging his swollen arm.

He put the opaque stone in his mouth and felt drowsiness gradually surge into his conscience as he entered Fetal Respiration.

Five hours had passed when he woke up.

This time, the Fetal Respiration duration was very long. When he was fully awake, the swelling had disappeared and the bone fractures had healed. What was left was only some indistinctive pain.

These were unimportant and would naturally heal in two or three days. Then, he would be stronger than before.

The fight had touched him greatly.

Originally he thought he would have the upper hand, however they were evenly matched.

The supplements seemed to have an important impact.

Before humans stepped foot into the galactic era, resources were scarce and those martial arts masters with a life force of 1 were one in a billion. But now, all sorts of potent supplements had appeared and there were even those with a life force in the three digits.

This was unimaginable in the ancient times.

This was the power of resources.

"How will I earn money?"

Jiang Li thought, "Maybe I'll go to school tomorrow to see what part time jobs I can take."

The second day, he came to the school early in the morning.

However, as soon as he arrived, his student chip beeped and an email appeared.

"It is Miss Blade's email."

Jiang Li opened it quickly. "Jiang Li, come to my office."

It was just these few short words.

"Miss Blade is looking for me. Is it because she heard that I can enter the second stage of Deep Sleep? It should be so, this is sensational news. There's no way she wouldn't have heard about the incident. If I demonstrate potential to get into Astral University, she would do her best to train me."

Jiang Li walked towards Miss Blade's office.

If one of Miss Blade's student entered Astral University, she would receive a huge reward from the school, education department and the government. This reward was extremely generous and she may even acquire societal contribution points and earn merits.

This was the same as education two hundred years ago. If a student in the class was able to enter a major university, then the teacher would receive benefits.

The school was large and the blocks of buildings were closely next to each other. There were even hover cars between the blocks. The whole school was actually a city with an area of more than ten kilometer squared.

This was the modern day school of humanity, compact and technologically advanced. Otherwise it wouldn't be able to house its student population of more than 800,000.

This high school was only one of the many high schools of the human world.

Before Long, Jiang Li arrived in front of a building.

This was where Miss Blade's office was. Miss Blade had a high status in the school, otherwise she wouldn't be teaching year 12 students.

As he arrived in front of the office, he was just about to knock on the door when a voice came from inside, "Come in, the door isn't locked."

"Yes."

Jiang Li walked in well mannered. A gust of aromatic breath hit his senses. The room was 500 metres squared and all the furnitures were wooden. Aromas seeped through from the wood.

"This is Aromatic Scale Wood, a type of precious wood. Only those of

wealthy families can afford it. Long term exposure to this wood is beneficial to one's mind and spirit. It is also great for zen and contemplation. The furnitures in here cost at least millions of star coins. Is Miss Blade this rich?" Jiang Li twitched his nose in an attempt to smell more of it.

Miss Blade sat in the middle of the room with meditation clothes. She appeared to be cultivating.

"Sit." She opened her eyes and gestured at a cushion in front of her.

"Yes Miss." Jiang Li sat down.

"I heard that you can enter the second stage of Deep Sleep? Contemplate for me." Miss Blade didn't waste time and went straight on topic.

"Yes." Jiang Li sat down and started contemplating. His thoughts were clear like crystal and his breaths flowed naturally. Slightly contemplating, he went into Deep Sleep.

Approximately ten minutes later, he heard a voice, "Wake up!"

He opened his eyes and saw Miss Blade talking.

"Of course." Miss Blade's eyes glimmered with astonishment, "Second stage of Deep Sleep, going into Deep Sleep at will. This means that in the future, when you finish training, you could use this to recover. It has high recovery speeds and in the whole school, no more than ten people could

reach this stage.”

“Miss, I still have many inadequacies.” Jiang Li was honest with himself.

“Yes, there are still many places you can improve on. Yesterday, I heard you had a fight with Zhang Yue and I've looked at the recording. I've concluded that your stamina is heavily deficient and your cells are in a state of starvation. You need large amounts of nutrition.” Miss Blade looked, “I have a tube of supplement liquid, drink it.”

Shoo

Miss Blade brought up a hand and a thing flew towards Jiang Li's face. Jiang Li caught it to discover it was a tube of Green God Nutrition Serum. It cost more than a thousand star coins.

“Miss.....” Jiang Li hesitated, this was too expensive.

“If I tell you to drink, just drink. Don't talk.” Miss Blade yelled.

“Yes.” Jiang Li gulped it down. As soon it reached his stomach, he felt warmth coursing through his entire body as the nutrition serum seeped into every part of his body. He felt the cells in his body squirming as if each one of them were ghosts released from hell, feasting frenzily as if they were insatiable for eternity.

After drinking it, Jiang Li felt a hunger surge from deep down in his heart.

"I don't know what happened to you, but all the cells in your body seem hyperactive. Unfortunately, you are nutritionally deficient.. Therefore, although your cells are getting stronger, they remain in a state of constant hunger. Recently, your life force sky rocketed but in actual fact, the cells are eating away at your life potential. If you continue like this without adequate nutrition, you will die very soon. You are overdrawing your life potential."

Miss Blade's tone was cold.

"What? I'm overdrawing my life potential?!" Jiang Li was shocked. He thought that he could enter Fetal Respiration whenever he wanted so even if he had any wounds, he could recover. In addition, his stamina and physical capabilities were increasing, and it seemed he was in good form. However, he didn't realise this was at the cost of overdrawing his life potential, "Looks like I can't continue Fetal Respiration! Otherwise, I will age faster or die an early death. I may not even live past twenty?"

"However, it will be fine as long as you have sufficient nutrition." Miss Blade said, "However, I won't be able provide for your nutrition, you need to earn it yourself. I am your teacher, I only acts as a guide you in your training. From now on, if you have any trouble in cultivation you can ask me. I'll be available for contact anytime."

"Okay." Jiang Li understood that the advanced nutrition serum was extremely precious. It was already a big reward for Miss Blade to give him a tube to drink. Long term supply would push anyone to the verge of bankruptcy.

"Miss, can you explain to me what really is Fetal Respiration?" Jiang Li was in a bad mood. Originally, he thought that it would be a smooth journey in cultivation with Fetal Respiration. Unexpectedly, it was actually overdrawing his life potential.

"Fetal does not mean fetus, it means Sheng Tai." Miss Blade closed her eyes, "What is Sheng Tai? It is people's soul or thoughts, or their spirit. Fetal Respiration means breathing with your soul, breathing with your spirit. Commoners explain it as people breathing like babies with their belly button. That is just absurd! Fetal Respiration Sutra says Tai is the spirit of people. Spirit is people's soul. Breathing with your spirit is similar to photosynthesis in plants. If people entered true Fetal Respiration, they could use their spirit to extract energy from the outside world to support bodily needs. This is also called Pi Gu. For example, ancient cultivators often sleep for a month without eating or drinking."

[TL note: (辟谷/Pi Gu) - (A state of being self sufficient, i.e eating is redundant)]

"If modern technology could allow normal people to enter straight into Fetal Respiration, what would happen?" Jiang Li asked again.

"Very simple, there was experiments conducted on this in the elite district. Those spiritual masters wanted to create strong people and hypnotised people into Fetal Respiration. In the end, the cells of those people became hyperactive and couldn't absorb energy from the outside world. The cells then began to eat up the person's life potential and he became exponentially strong. However, in the end he died of a sudden death." Miss Blade's voice was emotionless, "In fact, even when those ancient cultivators went into Fetal Respiration, they thought they could live without drinking or eating. However, the energy absorbed by Fetal Respiration wasn't far from enough to supply for bodily expenditure. How

much energy would there be even if they ate Ginseng and cubilose everyday? They cannot compare to nutritional serums and therefore many enlightened monks died the buddhists death and became dried corpses. They all starved to death. The higher your spiritual state was, the more energy the body needed. There weren't those resources in the ancient times and therefore there were little who truly succeeded in cultivation. The Three Realm Theory already proved this."

"Three Realm Theory?"

Jiang Li had never heard of this stuff.

Chapter 9 - The Three Realm Theory

"The Three Realm Theory was discovered by the work of countless Spiritual Masters and Psychologists, and has since become a staple and underlying principle of human cultivation. The first person to mention the theory was Wang Chao's wife. It was later that research completed the theory. It has become something of an empirical truth like Newton's laws of motion. Ah this is not a part of the study curriculum, but I'll talk a bit about it for you."

Miss Blade gestured at the cup of water in front of them. "If you were to hold this cup, what would you do first?"

Jiang Li stopped for a moment. "I'd stand up, then just pick up the cup?"

"No." Miss Blade shook her head. "The simple act of holding a cup involves the Three Realm Theory. First, to raise the cup, a thought must be produced by the brain, a cognition. But this simple cognition cannot lift the cup, and thus what does the brain do? It controls the body to stand up, extend the arms, and lift up the cup. It is after these steps that we can achieve the desired result. Do you understand the theory now?"

"No."

Jiang Li shook his head.

"Stupid!" Miss Blade cursed, "The mind's thought process of lifting the

cup is the Nether Realm, the Metaphysical Realm, the Realm of God. The cup is the Physical Realm. Your body bridges the gap between the two. The Three Realm Theory is about the relationship between the mind, the body and the physical world. If you did not use your body, would you be able to raise this cup?"

"No." Jiang Li was frank in his answer.

"That's correct. If you could, then that would mean possessing the power of mind over matter." Miss Blade asked another question, "If this cup was a pool, would you be able to lift it?"

"No."

"Yep. Even if your mind and spirit is strong, without an adequate body to interact with the physical realm, it is impossible to get things done. It would mean strong mentality but weak vitality." Miss Blade continued, "Of course, if your spiritual cultivation reaches a certain height, it is possible to directly interact with physical objects. This state is called Epiphanic. It is just as ancient civilizations coined it the Buddha has made its presence! Or God has made its presence! In fact that is how the mind and spirit can influence physical objects. What are entities like the Buddha and God? It is the metaphysical constructs of the heart and spirit. It is the Nether Realm, the Realm of God. It does not exist in the real world but rather in people's imaginations. It is a part of the mind and spirit. Heed this, where there is a heart there is a god. Mr Wang Yang once said, 'having left my heart, nothing ceases to exist'. The Three Realm Theory can be likened to the relationship of Heaven, Earth and Man. Heaven represents the mind and spirit; imagination. Earth is reality, whilst Man the body."

“So that’s how it works!” Having heard this Jiang Li immediately felt like he had gained a deeper understanding of cultivation.

“The Epiphanic state is well above Fetal Respiration. I’ll tell you a little about it. Till now, the levels of spiritual cultivation has always been Deep Sleep first, then Stasis and then Fetal Respiration. After Fetal Respiration is Zuo Wang. The word Zuo Wang first appeared with Chuang Tzu, a great sage. It was said ‘Forgetting one’s body, one’s mind, one’s manifestations. One with the Dao, and thou shalt be in Zuo Wang.’ It means that by overlooking one’s physical presence, including mental matters like knowledge and conscience, one will merge with the Dao, and achieve Zuo Wang.”

[TL Note: (坐忘/Zuo Wang) - a state of deep meditative absorption and mystical oneness, during which all sensory and conscious faculties are overcome and which is the base point for attaining Dao]

“Zuo Wang?” Jiang Li rolled around this new term in his mouth.

“In the Tang Dynasty of Ancient China, there was a Daoist called Sima Chengzhen who wrote texts covering the topic, called the Theory of Zuo Wang. But you shouldn’t read that for now as this is a state concerning Spiritual Masters. It will do you no good. Right now you should just stick to cultivation via Deep Sleep.” Miss Blade advised.

“This I know.” Jiang Li nodded her head. “So then, Epiphanic is above Zuo Wang?”

“Yep. the spiritual cultivation of man is first Deep Sleep, then Stasis, Fetal Respiration, Zuo Wang and Epiphanic. Who Knows? Maybe humans

will achieve new levels of cultivation, for we will always progress. However, even in the Elite District, only few can break through the barrier between mind and matter, and carry out epiphanies.” Miss Blade continued. “If you want to raise your spiritual cultivation, I recommend learning Hypnotism, because it trains the mind and spirit. Of course, right now for you sufficient nourishment is of the greatest concern. You can go to our school’s student department where there should be suitable missions for you issued by the Police Agency. Try there.”

“Yes miss!” Jiang Li stood up, bowed and exited the room, closing the door behind him.

He felt himself convulse over again due to hunger.

He went to the canteen to eat. Though his stomach was full, he still felt hungry.

There was no other way around it, for the nutritional value of common food was low. His appetite got triggered by the nutrition serum. It was extremely dangerous that he couldn’t feel it before.

It is like when people are hungry and want to eat, however they are so starved that they cannot ingest food. That is due to excessive hunger without proper nourishment, which meant the body ate away at stored fats and sugars, and in a way overdrew their life potential.

Jiang Li was at a similar situation before. In the absence of hunger, he thought he was getting healthier, which was in fact the opposite of what was happening. Good thing he just had a nutrition serum, which had recovered his ability to feel hungry.

He entered a building of the school.

"Fellow sister, could you help me find a high-pay mission?" Jiang Li directed his words at a girl with delicate features and long shoulder length hair that was operating a holographic computer.

"Shoo off with your titles! I'm still in grade 12." The girl gave Jiang Li a flitting glance, "Give me your student I.D."

Jiang Li rummaged out a thumb-sized chip and swiped it on the holographic computer. Personal details immediately appeared.

"A life force of only 0.7?" The girl had hints of mockery on her face. "You can only do house work, cleaning and normal jobs like that."

Having seen the disdain on the girl's face, Jiang Li didn't say a word. He suddenly twisted his wrists, creating crunching sounds with his bones. Lightly propelling it, it made a trail in the air.

Pa!

His hand shook like a reinforced steel bar, his fingers as if riled vipers, ready to strike. It would make people fear for their lives for this was not a hand but rather a metal python.

"What? [Boneless jiu-jitsu], C rank martial arts? [Twisting Bone Attack]."

The girl was flabbergasted, "Do you really only possess a life force of 0.7?"

She was not ignorant, otherwise she wouldn't have gotten a job at the school.

"I do not like being the talk of the town. During the tests I hid potential. I plan to amaze people in the Astral University entrance exams." Jiang Li knew he had suppressed the girl's talk with those moves, for those that could learn [Boneless JiuJitsu] were all influential personelles of the school; the creme de la creme of the student body.

"If that's so I'll help you find a job that pays a lot then. What about helping the police in solving a case?" The girl went on, "This pays the most, but there are dangers involved."

"Alright, I'll do case solving missions then. Out of the notices which one pays the most?" Jiang Li's eyes were hopeful.

"The highest reward is 5000 star coins," the girl said. "It's helping the police to catch a dangerous criminal. Recently a criminal had entered the city and committed many crimes. He is very strong, and knows the ways of Hypnotism."

"5000 star coins!" Jiang Li was shocked, for this was a huge sum of wealth.

But the criminal knew Hypnotism. For sure he was a very dangerous guy. Even his brother was probably no match for him, but since it's about

assisting the police in cracking down on the guy, direct confrontation was not required.

"Ok, I'll accept this job."

"You sure?"

"Yes I am."

"Ok, I'll print the related documents." Very quickly, a sheet was printed out and handed to Jiang Li.

"Go to the police agency to report yourself in. People will accept you if you have this school document. But since your life force is quite low on paper, when you get there you must demonstrate your power, otherwise they won't let you join the task force."

"Ok, I understand." Jiang Li turned around and left.

"Very interesting... There was a person like this in school. A life force of 0.7, yet effortlessly uses [Boneless jiujitsu]. I have remembered you Jiang Li." Looking at Jiang Li's departing figure, the girl smiled.

The police station was located at a very important area of the city. It was a big building, with hover cars zooming past it from all sides. Jiang Li's family could not afford cars like these for they were very expensive. Nowadays all cars were powered by an energy core which could let the

car travel up to 30,000 kilometers without pollution.

Normal households could not finance such expensive cars, yet low grade cars were not produced for the government wanted to limit pollution.

Those who possessed cars were all from high-class and wealthy backgrounds.

"I'm here to report for a temporary job." Entering a hall with many policemen working, Jiang Li walked up towards a counter and handed over the school documents.

A policeman of about 30 years old received the files and immediately had a look of disdain on his face. "What the fuck? A life force of 0.7 wants to help us catch the criminal?"

Whilst talking he chuckled the files back at Jiang Li.

"Wait!" Jiang Li extended his arm and lightly repressed the policeman's hand.

"Huh?" The policeman tried to retaliate with the ancient martial technique [Silk Hands] that could break the perpetrator's arms by lightly wrapping around them, but Jiang Li's arms could turn a larger degree than him, and in the short exchange Jiang Li swelled his hands up by more than 5 centimeters and stabbed the policeman's shoulder.

"Ow!"

Sharp stinging pain numbed the policeman's shoulder, as if half of his body was struck by lightning.

"[Twisting Bone Attack]? [Projecting Bone Stab]!" He wailed. "Such extents of bone pliability and toughness!"

"Oh really? This student has learnt [Boneless JiuJitsu]? That's a C rank martial arts."

"He could use [Boneless JiuJitsu] in a real fight?"

"It's been awhile since there's been a student of this caliber." A few policemen crowded around. They all had a life force of 0.8 and were experienced in combat.

To become a police officer, a life force of 0.8 was a prerequisite.

"Since you know C rank martial arts, you are more than up for the job." A middle aged police came over and flicked through Jiang Li's data. "Hmmm seems like you've hid quite a bit of talent. We'll allow you to enter the police taskforce, but you must do as we say, and not brashly try be the hero. Do you understand?"

"Yes sir!"

"Follow me."

Jiang Li was brought to an office, which housed the task force for major

cases. There were more than ten policemen, each a combat expert which were responsible for this case.

Besides them, there were also a few boys and girls that were quite obviously students. But they were quite old, each of them university students above the age of 20. Of course, they couldn't have been from Astral University. They were probably from normal universities.

Mankind had tens and thousands of famous universities, but none of them could be comparable to Astral University. Everyone from Astral University were practically invincible.

The university students were surprised to see Jiang Li enter the room, as they didn't expect a high school student would come here to work.

"This is Jiang Li, a year 12 student. He knows the C rank martial art [Boneless JiuJitsu], and is proficient enough to use it in combat." The middle aged policeman introduced Jiang Li.

"C rank martial arts, dayum."

Immediately everyone looked at him differently.

"I don't know anything so please take care of me." Jiang Li acted humble.

"We wouldn't be able to take care of you since you know C rank martial arts. If you try for Defense Universities your rank would be higher than us," a policeman commented, "But this case is especially tricky. We are lacking

personnel and wished for excellent assistance. Your arrival is very welcomed! This is the basic outline of the case, you should read it first."

"Ok."

Jiang Li did a army salute, his posture straight as if like a professional soldier. This was a quality that all students should have.

In these times student cadet training was very long. There is a cadet training program of up to one year in both primary schools and high schools . This was a policy forcefully implemented by the government to increase student quality.

Chapter 10 - Discovery of The Brigand

Jiang Li sat down and flipped through this case file to understand the situation of the case.

It was only simple information.

He was a student helping the police with hard labour. He wouldn't have inside information on the actual case.

The files only registered a criminal who had hypnotising abilities and was

committing crimes on the go. He came from another city and was extremely cruel

and cunning. Now, police from all different areas had all placed a bounty on

his head. However, it was difficult to grasp his tracks.

For three months in a row, he hid in this city committing multiple crimes.

When humanity united, each city was enormous. The city Jiang Li was in was called Xing Hua City. Its population was well over 100 million. Not only Earth but also the Moon, Mars and many other planets in the galaxy had huge human cities established. If people wished to go to these places, they had to apply for wormhole travel. They could buy an expensive ticket aboard the galactic spaceship only after the government's permission.

Ticket prices were expensive, however, and only the rich could afford them. It was extravagant to go on holidays at the residential areas on other planets and it was very difficult for normal people to pass the application and thus many earth inhabitants never had the opportunity to go to other planets for the majority of their lives. This was similar to many people never leaving their home country 200 years ago.

"This person has a very strong battle power with an estimated life force of over 1. But the bright side is, he has no weaponry."

Seeing that Jiang Li got to know the case, the middle aged policemen opened a big screen and immediately projected a three dimensional projection. It was a lively youth that was younger than 30 years. His face was stern yet cold. There was evil in his eyes as he stared coldly at everyone.

"You're all students therefore it is unnecessary for you to engage in combat. All you need to do is be responsible for a region of search. If you find this person, alert us immediately and at the same time keep an eye on him from a distance. You must not be discovered or you will be in peril."

"Yes!" Jiang Li stood up, "I will follow your orders."

"We also follow your orders!" A few university students said.

The middle aged policeman nodded, "This is a test for you. We will assess you on your performance. If you perform well, there will be a record in the files. If you're interested after graduation, you will have

bonus merits in the policeman entrance exam. As for salary, if the criminal is not found, you may get 10 star coins. If he is found and you have alerted me you will all be rewarded 300 star coins regardless if he is captured or not. If you found the criminal and we apprehended him, then you may receive 5000 star coins as a reward. If...."

The middle aged policeman paused for a bit, "If an accident is to occur, the police department will at most pay some money to your families. Therefore, you need to try to best to protect your own safety, do you understand? If you agree, then sign a temporary electronic agreement!"

"Yes!" Everyone replied in unison

"Good, from now on, you are backup policemen. I will make some arrangements. There are six people here, and I will give each of you your respective missions." The middle aged policeman scanned the people in front of him, "Jiang Li, you and Moona Lin will be in a group. Pretend to be lovers and search the pedestrian streets. Be careful, this is where the criminal may appear the most. As for the others, scatter out and search the commercial areas, residential areas and the stations...."

"You want me to act like lovers with a high school student?" Moona Lin was a female university student, her mouth was like a cherry and her face was very exquisite. It was full of shock

at this moment.

"What? Do you have a problem?" The middle aged policeman looked over with penetrating eyes.

"I will follow your orders!" Moona Lin replied hurriedly. If she didn't comply, it would be very likely that she lost this part time job and receive

a negative record. It would be difficult if she wished to apply to become a policeman after university.

"Okay, let's move out now. Remember, report immediately if you find anything suspicious."

"Yes!"

All the students were on form and of high quality.

When they left after being allocated their duties, the middle aged policeman responsible for the case sighed, "The quality of the students is getting higher and higher now. When we were in high school, there wasn't anyone in any school capable of cultivating [Boneless Jujitsu]."

"Yeah, the life force of those few university students is very strong. They can become the core members of the police force."

"However, this time, we're responsible for this case. The criminal is a member of the Sovereign State Recovery Organization. What if something happens while we let the students participate....."

The other conservative policeman had objections.

"They are all outstanding students. According to government policies, they may go out for experience."

The middle aged policeman scanned with his eyes, "Don't underestimate these students. We can't find a match in the normal police

force for those geniuses with a life force of 1 in Xing Hua High School. Only military instructors could match them. They would not come even if we asked them for help. We're lacking personnel for this case. They are only helping us search and we're not relying on them for the arrest so there is little danger involved.

"My son is also in Xing Hua High School but his life force just won't go up. It's still 0.7." A policeman sighed.

"Lao Huang, your son is only year 10, it's still early. Maybe in year 11 it will be 0.8 and 0.9 in year 12 and after graduation he comes for police academy and ends up with a position above you."

"Hopefully so."

"Oh yea, last year there was another group that hired a few students for assistance. They actually managed to capture the rebelled sergeant. What was that students name again...."

"He was Jiang Tao." The middle aged policeman flicked through the record, "Jiang Tao is in year 11 at Xing Hua High School and is ranked in the front. His current life force grade is 0.98, fist power is 0.9 tonnes, and 100 metre sprint is 5.5 seconds. Oh yea, that Jiang Li from before is his big brother."

"He's only in year 11 and his fist power is 0.9 tonnes? Doesn't that mean that no one here is his match?" Another policeman exclaimed, "Life force 0.98, he's about to reach 1. That's the seed for Astral University."

"Haha, entering Astral University is like one step to the heavens. Our Xing Hua city head of police department graduated from Xing Hua University and he was those students who were almost unable to graduate due to their grades. Yet, he has such a high status." A police said in admiration, "If my son could get in, he would bring glory to our ancestors."

"So that Jiang Tao has a boundless future. I wonder what his brother is like?" The middle aged policeman searched the records, "Also, publish another temporary job mission in the school and attract more outstanding students to participate in this case. We don't have enough people. We need large numbers of people to search all the places. It would be best if it were girls as that criminal targets girls specifically."

Yes!"

Nighttime, the lights were mesmerizing in the central business district. The skyscrapers that soared into the clouds were magnificent constructions that could rotate. It bewitched people. Only the wealthy people could afford expenditure here. Everything was expensive and civilians could only watch as onlookers.

"Junior schoolmate, we have searched for three nights and still haven't found anything." Moona Lin sat down, "Let's rest for a bit before we continue our search."

"I don't need to rest." Jiang Li said calmly, "Senior schoolmate, your stamina can't be that bad, your life force should be 0.8."

"Hmph!" Moona Lin rolled her eyes, "I meant that if we continue searching like this, we're only wasting our efforts. 5000 star coins is

enticing but we must find him first and let the police capture him before we get it. I don't think our hopes are very high."

"Let's go to the shop in front and have a look." Jiang Li pointed at the shop on the floor above, "It's all exorbitant items there, and many wealthy ladies would be shopping there. If the criminal wanted to assault someone, he would select there."

"Wow, Ancient Dragon leather products, world class brand." Moona Lin seemed lively again and jumped up, "Let's go, let's go, and see what new models are there."

She dragged Jiang Li upstairs as she talked walking into the huge shop. The decorations of this shop seemed to be from was very science fiction. The deep sea blue wall was embedded with bright spots. It was as if you were coming into outer space with all sorts of light rays intertwining around each other, making people feel as if they were in a crystal palace.

There were clothes, cosmetics, and leather products. Each one of them weren't cheap. The lowest was a few thousand star coins, some tens of thousands. This wasn't something that the working class could afford.

The average monthly salary of the working class was around 10 to 100 star coins.

Many female students were looking here as well, and they couldn't afford it so they only looked to satisfy their eyes.

"Wow, I love every leather product here. Too bad I can't afford it." Moona Lin looked everywhere and strolled, staring at the extravagant products, "Look at the bag, if any guy buys that for me, I will be his

girlfriend.”

“That bag is worth 50000 star coins, and I wouldn’t be able to afford it even if I went bankrupt.” Jiang Li knew that Moona Lin also came from a normal family otherwise, she wouldn’t have taken this job.

“Excuse me, is the Space Lizard bag I ordered here yet?” A voice traversed into Jiang Li’s ears. It was a girl with shades followed by two men in black. They seemed to be bodyguards and had strong life forces.

This girl was definitely from a wealthy family. A bag made from Space Lizard skin must be custom made. It was extremely expensive and each one was worth more than 100, 000 star coins.

Even normal wealthy people couldn’t afford it, and only the seriously wealthy could.

“It’s here miss.” A few pretty female waiters came and carried a pretty handbag. It was glamorous, elegant and had superior temperament. Mounted on it were precious beads. It looked like a magnificent piece of art and many people looked on with admiration.

Those beads weren’t actually mounted. They are unique to the skin of Space Lizards.

“My lord....” Moona Lin was dumbfounded when she saw the bag, “Junior schoolmate, junior schoolmate, I want this even in my dreams. This is a classical fantasy. I would accept no matter who gave it to me as a proposal.”

“Focus observing the surrounding...” Jiang Li reminded Moona Lin. Although he saw Moona Lin was infatuated, she remained vigilant some of the times and did not forget her job. From this, it could be seen that she wasn’t stupid.

“Miss, this design of Space Lizard bag is a fantasy classic. I also want to order one, would it be possible for me to have a look?” A graceful young man walked towards the wealthy lady in

shades. He wore noble clothes especially the T-shirt. A small ‘s’ was embroidered on it. This was a world class symbol. People who often roamed the exquisite shops would know it. This was made from the silk of a Snow Silkworm from another planet. It was very famous and precious costing around many tens of thousands of star coins.

The youth was 1.9m tall and had a very handsome complexion. His smile was capturing and had a imposing demeanor as he talked. The two bodyguards knew he was an important figure and therefore didn’t obstruct him.

However, suddenly, a sense of horror rose in Jiang Li’s heart.

This was the sixth sense he acquired from frequent cultivation in Fetal Respiration.

Chapter 11 - Hypnosis

A sense of danger surged into his heart. The sixth sense cultivated by Fetal Respiration was strong. Every cell in Jiang Li's body was breathing and he was almost certain: "This man is suspicious, definitely suspicious."

"Hello." The wealthy girl in shades had good eyes and could tell this youth wasn't the average person. Of course she wouldn't reject his attempt at a conversation so she smiled, "You can have a look."

"How may I call you miss?" The youth's smile was absolutely captivating and had a huge attraction on girls. Jiang Li also had never seen a man as handsome as him.

"This guy is so hot." Moona Lin thought to herself but suddenly discovered that Jiang Li's facial expression didn't seem right, "what's wrong? Junior schoolmate."

"Nothing, let's observe first." Jiang Li waved his hand and pretended that he was going to buy the extravagant items. As he pulled Moona Lin around for window shopping, he kept his senses focused on the conversation between the youth and the rich girl.

"My surname is Xue." The wealthy girl offered her hand and shook hands with this handsome man, "How may I address you?"

"My surname is Feng." The handsome youth said, "Miss Xue, how about we have some tea together and make friends?"

"Okay." Miss Xue waved her hands and told the bodyguards beside her, "You guys can go back first, I will drive back home myself."

"Uh...." The two bodyguards hesitated. At this time, the youth scanned the two bodyguards and they nodded immediately, "Then we'll be gone miss."

Shuah!

In that instance, the hairs on Jiang Li's body stood up.

The moment that handsome youth glanced at him, he felt he was being glared at by a ferocious beast. It was so dangerous that his spirit was wincing. If it was someone else, they would not have this feeling. But he had trained a long time in Fetal Respiration and his spiritual awareness was more sensitive than those with a life force of 1.

It was also very strange that Miss Xue just accepted an invitation from a stranger and even sent away her bodyguards.

"Could it be!" A thought rose from Jiang Li's mind, "Is this person the fugitive? According to the files, the fugitive was a hypnotist. Those two bodyguards were also hypnotised by him? This Miss Xue is also hypnotised by him? But this person looks nothing like the fugitive? Did the fugitive wear a masquerade? Did he change his muscles and bones?"

Those strong cultivators could temporarily change their bones and muscles to work with their masquerade. It was no surprise if they changed into another person in a matter of seconds.

This person was definitely vicious especially with the almost suffocating

feeling he gave Jiang Li.

He was almost certain this was the fugitive. No wonder he couldn't be caught, his masquerade was impeccable.

"Senior Schoolmate, let's go outside."

Jiang Li suddenly dragged Moona Lin outside of the shop quietly.

"Did you discover something?" Moona Lin was confused but still cooperated. In the three days they spent together, she knew Jiang Li was a calm and collected person with a strong spiritual cultivation. Many people in university were not a match for him.

The average life force of university students were just 0.7-0.8. This was the limit for the normal people of this time.

However, Jiang Li's life force was infinitely close to 0.9. This exceeded a lot of university students.

"I think I found the fugitive, it is that man." Jiang Li said, "Don't look at him, his spiritual capabilities are very strong. He will sense any eyesight. I'm no match for him, we need to call headquarters. Don't move. I believe his target is the wealthy girl."

"That's not really possible right?" Moona Lin frowned, she had great impression of that graceful young man. He was handsome.

"Believe me, my spiritual capabilities are of the extent that I can go into Deep Sleep whenever I want." Jiang Li found an excuse.

"What? You're a genius like that?" Moona Lin was surprised and looked at him like he was some sort of monster, "There are barely anyone who can enter the second stage of Deep Sleep even in university."

"Senior schoolmate. Call the headquarters and inform them of the situation. I'll have a look and see what's wrong with that man. I can constrict my spirit so that he won't notice me. This man is extremely dangerous, it won't be good if he attacks you." Jiang Li planned.

"Okay!"

Moona Lin acted according to the plan

BUzz buzz....buzz buzz

A sound came from the computer of the investigation squad in the police department. A policeman stood up abruptly: "There's a target."

"Really?" The middle aged policeman walked over doubtedly, "These students found him? Let's not make an embarrassment by identifying the wrong person. Connect to the surveillance video, I will talk."

Yes!"

"A three dimensional image was shown. It displayed everything in that shop and the 3D projection of the young man appeared in the centre of the huge office of the investigation squad. The police department could connect to the surveillance of any place in the city at any time.

"Jiang Li, Moona Lin are you sure it's the fugitive?" The earphones in Jiang Li's ears sounded, "This person does not look like the fugitive at all."

"No, the Miss Xue should be a wealthy girl. The first time she saw the man, she sent away her bodyguards. The bodyguards didn't want to leave but the man just glanced at the bodyguard and they left immediately." Jiang Li explained, "My spiritual cultivation tells me that that man is extremely dangerous."

"Really?" The middle aged policeman ordered, "Search the index."

"Yes!"

With the speed of the computer, all the information were examined within five seconds: "Report, the lady is called Xue Bear, she is the elder daughter of the Xue family! Xue family operates in housing estates, supermarkets and apparels. They have over 100 million star coins in family wealth! The appearance of the young man is not in the records and thus couldn't be examined."

"Not in the files?" The middle aged police officer's face transformed into excitement and smashed his fists on the table, "That is a major point of suspicion."

Ever since humanity united, everyone had an identity chip and went into the records of the state. The fact that the young man was not in the records meant that he was in masquerade and therefore could not be found in the system.

Sounds of footsteps could be heard

All the members of the investigation squad gathered knowing that there was a major breakthrough in the investigation. An unregistered face was certainly a fugitive. They could arrest people just with this point of evidence.

"Notify everyone immediately, lock down that area of the commercial district. Attention, this fugitive is highly precarious, and we must not alert him. Surveillance, keep your eyes fixed on this person. Notify Jiang Li and Moona Lin, tell them not to move, they have accomplished a major feat!"

The voice of the middle aged police officer was almost twisted and started making arrangements immediately.

"Report.... Xue Bear and the suspect went into the toilets on the surveillance. What do we do? The suspect may hurt Xue Bear." The surveillance person suddenly said. They could see the situation with a 3D image, and even conversations could be heard.

On a quiet sidewalk, the handsome youth smiled to Xue Bear, "I'm sorry I need to use the bathroom."

"I also need to use the bathroom." Xue Bear smiled but abnormally as if she was actually hypnotised.

"Not good." The eyes of the middle aged policeman pulsed. Xue Bear had a very high status. If something happens, the Xue family would trouble the police department. In order to appease their anger at that time, he would probably be relegated.

ZZZZZZ

At this moment, something dangerous happened and the surveillance screen suddenly went black. Nothing could be seen.

"What happened?"

"The surveillance equipment was damaged, we can't see the situation there anymore." Another policeman was beginning to worry.

"Damm!" The middle aged policeman rushed over immediately, "Jiang Li, Jiang Li....."

A familiar voice came from the chip, "Sir, what is it?"

"Order, I want you to stop the fugitive to the best of your abilities. I won't allow him to assault Xue Bear, this is an order. If you stop him successfully, I will give you first rank merits." The middle aged officer said worriedly. He didn't care that much at this point. Jiang Li was the only hope.

"Yes! I will obey the order!" Jiang Li's voice sounded like a professional soldier allowing the middle aged officer to gasp in relief. In reality, Jiang Li could have rejected because his mission was accomplished. Retreat safely should have been the order.

"Even if there wasn't an order, I'm going to stop the fugitive!" Jiang Li closed the mic and moved out rapidly as he saw Xue Bear and the handsome youth walk towards the toilets.

"Stop!"

He yelled loudly concentrating all of his spirit and directed it towards Xue Bear hoping to wake her up. Frequent cultivation in Fetal Respiration allowed his words to have an intangible authority. The sudden explosion of sound woke her up.

"What happened?" Xue Bear's body shook and her whole body was fazed as if she just woke up from a dream.

"What?"

At that moment, the handsome youth turned around and his eyes spewed out an eerie green glow as he looked at Jiang Li.

His temperament suddenly changed as if he had become an astral demon.

Instantly, Jiang Li felt like he was suffocating as if he had entered an endless nightmare. His nose couldn't breathe. He was like a fish that had left the water and couldn't live for long.

From an outsider's perspective, Jiang Li and the handsome youth were just staring at each other. The handsome youth had eerie eyes while Jiang Li was like the walking dead. His face was becoming gradually pale and he waved his hands and feet as if he was insane.

This was hypnosis. It made Jiang Li's brain unable to control his breathing which could lead to death by suffocation or insanity.

Two hundred years ago, the hypnotists could only hypnotise people into sleeping. Now the average constitution of humans had increased significantly. Dangerous people who knew the arts of hypnosis could control people's movements and even induce brain death just by looking into their eyes.

As Jiang Li descended into a dangerous situation, suddenly, something near his chest seemed to have moved.

It was the opaque stone!

He stored it right on his chest.

The moment the stone moved, a pulse of spirit energy seemingly entered his brain!

Huah! He opened his eyes and his eyes suddenly became extremely piercing. It pierced into the eyes of the handsome youth. This was a pure spiritual battle. It was perilous.

Arghhhh!

The handsome youth, the vicious fugitive cried out in pain and shut his eyes tightly. Two streams of blood trickled down. His hypnosis was met with a counterattack from an anonymous spirit energy. It caused his nerves to collapse while increasing his blood pressure. The blood vessels in his brain exploded and he lost his sight.

In an instant, this fugitive was heavily wounded.

"Fuck, what is this? How could there be a spirit energy so strong....." He sprinted outside desperately and started escaping with high speeds. He was reckless.

Meanwhile, Jiang Li felt at this moment that the opaque stone underwent some changes.

"Don't leave!" In the spur of the moment, he followed his instincts and pursued.

Chapter 12 - Boneless Dragon Snake

This was the best chance to apprehend the fugitive!

Jiang Li only had one target in mind. The fugitive was crippled right now and lost his sight. His strength had been reduced significantly. This was the best chance. If other people caught the fugitive, they could only receive 5000 star coins of reward. If Jiang Li caught the fugitive himself, there would be much greater reward afterwards!

The merit for finding the fugitive and apprehending the fugitive personally was completely different.

He took a step and accelerated outside at full speed following closely by that person's steps.

That person didn't go by the elevator but went into the stairs of the safety exit.

He rushed towards the roof.

Jiang Li stuck close by. He was amazed on the inside. This person had lost sight in both his eyes and could still recognise the way. It seemed like his spiritual prowess had reached the state where he could use his heart to see the world.

The whole building was over 70 storeys tall but both of them were

flying fast and reached the deserted top in a short while. It was the abandoned roof and there were buildings around them.

Suddenly, the handsome youth stopped and waited for Jiang Li who had arrived subsequently. His eyes were bleeding but his face was calm "Didn't think I would flip my boat in a dark passage and fall into your hidden tricks. Unfortunately, you're too greedy. Did you think that capturing me would give you major merits? The avaricious usually end up losing their lives."

"Not good."

Jiang Li suddenly realised that he was a bit too greedy. He felt alone without assistance when faced against the fugitive.

The eyes were the windows to the soul. Both of his eyes were blind and he could no longer hypnotize. However, the fugitive had great physical capabilities, his life force definitely exceeded one or even greater.

Woosh!

The fugitive pushed on towards him. There was a blur in front of Jiang Li's eyes as he barely saw his movements. The fugitive's footsteps were like a butterfly traversing amidst the flowers, dancing as it went through. The unpredictability that was brought with it was a lethal threat.

"[Twisting Bone Attack]!"

Jiang Li had no choice but to use his strongest martial art. His body

twisted as he tried to avoid the attack.

“Too slow!”

The fugitive's fists had already arrived in front of him. In this situation, he couldn't do anything except hold his hands in defense.

Pang!

He was sent flying outwards and smashed heavily onto a trash canister. The trash canister shattered into pieces and he was covered in filth.

“Your physical capabilities aren't bad; it's almost at 0.9 right?” The fugitive's voice reached his ear as the fugitive jumped. A distance of a little more than ten meters only required 0.5 seconds. He arrived beside Jiang Li and stepped down aiming for his head.

It was like a huge elephant stomping.

Rumble“rubble”

A deep foot mark was engraved onto the floor, and Jiang Li rolled to the side to dodge the stomp. Otherwise if the stomp had landed, his head would have been smashed like a watermelon.

The situation was precarious. “He's too strong, my practical experience is inadequate, and my physical capabilities are far inferior!”

Jiang Li relied on the spiritual prowess of his Fetal Respiration to discern the danger and react instinctively to avoid the lethal blow.

Now he finally knew what it meant to be ignorant. A high school student who hadn't even experienced a bloodied real life battle wanted to stop a fugitive from escaping?

If he could avoid this danger and survive, it would be of great significance to his spirit. He would grow as if he had thoroughly remolded himself.

Only real life cruel brawls could train people.

"Eh?" The fugitive was dumbfounded for a second when he saw Jiang Li dodge his [Crushing Mountain Stomp]. He was delivering successive lethal blows yet Jiang Li could dodge them. This was absolutely a miracle.

His life force had reached 1.1. Killing anyone below 1 was as easy as eating and drinking even though he was heavily injured! Relying on his strong spiritual prowess, he could completely control his blood vessels, muscles, internal secretions and even nerves to excite himself and control the injuries.

"Die!"

When two successive blows didn't kill Jiang Li, the fugitive ripped off his shirt showing his naked upper torso. He became more violet and struck rapidly like lightning.

Hua hua hua!

His shadow like figure approached as his hand blade cut through the air making shrieking sounds of explosion.

In Jiang Li's eyes, he almost couldn't see the actual path of attack. It was just a fury of after images.

The fugitive was this strong!

"Am I going to die?" Jiang Li's sixth sense told himself that he was going to die without question. However, he wasn't satisfied. With the pressure of a life or death situation, Jiang Li fought for his life.

Crack crack... The muscles ripped as bone-cracking sounds transmitted from inside his body. His body started waving and writhing like a dragon-snake as he avoided the fugitive's hand blade.

"[Boneless Dragon Snake Dance]!"

There were five moves to [Boneless Jujitsu] altogether. [Twisting Bone Attack], [Projecting Bone Attack], [Shattering Bone Collapsing The Clouds], [Boulder Breaking Bone Shatter], [Boneless Dragon Snake Dance]. The physical requirements for the last move were just crazy. But when the person was able to use it, the body moved in a manner similar to a dragon-snake and was able to dodge all attacks.

According to legends, some martial artists who were able to perfect [Boneless Dragon Snake Dance] couldn't be shot even by guns.

Originally, Jiang Li wasn't able to use [Boneless Dragon Snake Dance] but in serious situations, every effort for survival counts. His desire to live activated his innate potential.

His spirit and body all reached their absolute limit.

Wush, Wush.... His body waved incessantly in absurd angles. His movements were swift and even managed to avoid three strikes from the opponent's hand blade.

When the hand blade swept, air ripples that could lacerate any body parts were formed. It was as sharp as scissors.

Jiang Li consecutively dodged attacks and the fugitive was surprised too. He didn't think that an insignificant person had such a strong battle power. However, he could tell that many parts of Jiang Li's muscles were torn due to using [Boneless Dragon Snake Dance] and he couldn't last much longer.

Perhaps any moment, Jiang Li would fall.

The fugitive breathed deeply and was about to release an even stronger lethal blow.

At this moment, Jiang Li felt the opponent's killing intent.

He dodged so many attacks that his muscles were tearing apart and could barely life a finger. He had no choice but to close his eyes and wait for death.

"I can't die, I need to move!" He wanted to run again.

Bang bang bang.....

Just at this moment, a gun sounded from the door and bullets rained towards the fugitive in the nick of time. Immediately, the fugitive fell into a perilous situation.

These bullets were all light particles. They weren't the physical bullets from two hundred years ago.

The current department abandoned the physical bullet weaponry a long time ago. Taking its place was the laser pulse weaponry.

A whirring sound came from the air. It was aircrafts with many laser dots aimed at the fugitive.

The police department mobilized their resources and began their lock down from the sky making it impossible for the fugitive to escape.

"Damm it, why is it that fast!" The fugitive hopped and couldn't bother himself with killing Jiang Li anymore. His movements were more agile than that of a cat, dodging the bullets fired at him. However, the aircrafts in the air became more and more dense. Hundreds to thousands of laser rays shot down and penetrated his body.

Argh!

He seemed to be anaesthetized and couldn't move as he fell to the ground.

Subsequently, many of the aircrafts landed and police appeared. Jiang Li knew those lasers were a new type of weapon called Laser Anesthetic Gun .

Those who were hit would be anesthetized. Normal people would fall unconscious with one shot. This fugitive dropped after so many shots. His physical capabilities were extraordinarily strong.

Many police approached the fugitive warily while the police on the outside held guns and aimed. If there was the slightest movement, they would deliver the killing blow.

Moreover, Jiang Li also saw a commander with mobility mechanical armour appear. The armour was extremely expensive. It was impenetrable and granted people super human strength as well as the ability to fly. The 'Iron Man' in the movies two hundred years ago was basically this. But now, humans had made it reality.

However, the mobility armor was made from a type of alloy that was very inconvenient to wear. People said that humans had already invented 'Biological Armor'. It was a very small organic chip that could transform in an instant. The wearer's body would appear with intricate pieces of scales just like a dragon. They would have the ability to fly as well as the ability to go under the earth. They were capable of anything.

This was humanity's secret weapon.

When Jiang Li acquired the Great Dream Heart Sutra stone, he once saw those elites wearing biological armour appear aboard the human battleships.

Even the cost of the alloy armor was exorbitant. A set cost between one million to a few million star coins. Normal people could never afford it. On top of that, it was forbidden to buy or sell mechanized armors. Even the wealthy couldn't own it as only the government agencies and the army were allowed to possess them.

"There's a wounded person here, send him to the hospital immediately!"

The policeman approached Jiang Li and discovered his muscles were torn and his body was bathed in blood. They need to start medical procedures immediately. The middle aged policeman appeared at this time, "This is a student who assisted us with the case and provided important information for the fugitive's arrest. He must be treated with complete medical attention. The bills will be paid by the government."

"Yes!"

Not long afterwards, a few nurses and a doctor came up. They placed Jiang Li on the trolley bed and escorted him to the hospital. Jiang Li could actually move, in fact, it was only some outside wounds.

He wasn't afraid of the opaque stone being disclosed as other people couldn't do anything even if they took it. To them, it was just a normal stone.

Seeing that Jiang Li was carried away, a policeman approached, "Sir, we have confirmation. This person's DNA was tested to be a member of the Sovereign State Recovery Organization. His alias is 'Illusory Fox'."

"Sir, we found a flying vehicle amidst the rubble on the roof. This person attempted to escape with the flying vehicle but was stopped. Only then did we have the opportunity to arrive on time. Otherwise, he would have boarded the vehicle and escaped. Then, it would have been extremely difficult to capture him again." Another police officer reported.

"Sir, this was the scene captured by the satellite," Another policeman came and delivered a video. It was released and formed the scene of Jiang Li's battle with the fugitive just then.

"Oh?" This really was a high school student. He's a good seed." Clunk clunk.... The person wearing the mecha walked over. The armor unequipped itself forming an iron case that was carried in his hands.

This person had a robust figure and eyes like knives. It could be seen that he was a soldier just with one glance. More than a hundred kilograms of armour was carried by his hand with ease. He had strong physical capabilities. "Colonel Song." The middle aged policeman greeted, "He is a good seed but his practical experience is a little off. But being able to survive in Illusory Fox's hands for a while means that he has a great future ahead of him. By the way, this time we captured a member of the Sovereign State Recovery Organization (SSRO). There will be great rewards coming from our superiors."

"That damned SSRO." Colonel Song had an angry complexion, "They wreak havoc everywhere. We humans have united 200 years ago. The countries have become the past. This group of people still want to revive

the country era. Do they want humans to go back into the era of war between countries once again?"

Chapter 13 - For Humanity

In the hospital, Jiang Li fully recovered with an hour of treatment.

Minor injuries such as muscles laceration and bone damage could be easily cured by the high tech medical techniques such as tissue and bone regeneration.

Of course, these techniques had high costs. More than 1000 star coins were required each time. Normal civilians all chose other methods of treatment. Those ones took longer and required 10 days to half a month before recovering.

Since the fees were subsidized by the government this time, of course Jiang Li chose the method that was the fastest and had no after effects.

In fact, his injury could easily be recovered with Fetal Respiration in a few days. However, his family would be worried for him if he came back with a body full of wounds. Also now, he knew that Fetal Respiration required large amounts of nutrition for support. He was expending his life potential each time he went into Fetal Respiration.

Before earning enough money, he would never use Fetal Respiration again.

Fetal Respiration was more intense than any other intense physical activity.

After he was told off by Miss Blade, he went online and did some research. He discovered that Fetal Respiration was the activity of every single cell in the body. The energy toll was more than ten times or maybe even 100 times than that of sprinting and boxing. If it wasn't provided large amounts of nutrition, it would simply draw on his life potential.

"I earned 5000 star coins this time. I can buy the Green God Nutrition Serum. Hopefully my cells won't be hungry anymore and the absorbed life potential can be supplemented back."

Jiang Li felt the opaque stone on his chest. He felt this was a life taking stone. If Miss Blade didn't warn him, he would've died a year and a half later.

Pulses of hunger rose again.

It was useless to eat food. Even if he ate till his stomach exploded, he would still be hungry because normal nutrition was like rock to people who used Fetal Respiration.

No wonder there was the phrase "Not eating food of the mortal world'. It was because for people in a high state of cultivation, food people normal people eat was useless and disgusting like mud.

A fit of footsteps sounded out, and a middle aged policeman and another few cops appeared in the patient room, "Jiang Li, how are you injuries?"

"It was only external injuries, tissue laceration and bone fracture. There were no damages to the nerves so it was easily recoverable." Jiang Li checked his body and didn't find any major problems. He stood up straight and firm showing his military form. Every high school student had to receive one year of military training. He knew what he had to do, "By the way sir, was that person the fugitive? It wouldn't be good if we captured the wrong person."

"Congratulations Jiang Li, your luck was very good and so was your ability. You found the fugitive. This person is a member of the terrorist organization SSRO. He is called Illusory Fox and has a strong spiritual prowess. He knew how to hypnotize and had a life force of 1.1. You stopped him in time and prevented him from escaping with his aircraft. You have accomplished a major feat and we have decided to reward you with 5000 star coins. Your partner Moona Lin will also receive 1000 star coins of reward." The middle aged police officer said, "Take out your student chip."

"Yes."

Jiang Li took out his student chip and a policeman in the financial sector took out a handheld laptop and swiped the chip. Ding dong! A sound came from the student chip, "5000 star coins successfully transacted."

The student chip was also Jiang Li's bank account and had his identity, fingerprint, appearance, DNA, family members, study results and all record files.....

Humanity had long been using this one for all card. It was very convenient and a chip stayed with the person for life.

"Also, your merits have been recorded in the files. This time, you may receive a one star merit. You are now a one star citizen." The middle aged police officer said.

"One star citizen!" Jiang Li's body shook and surprise showed on his face. Merits were a rating given by the government for those who had contributed to the human society. With merits, people had a great advantage when seeking employment, joining the army, and starting a business. Major companies also gave special consideration to people who had merits.

This was the government's way of rewarding citizens for doing good things. It was set for the contribution of humanity.

Merits were very hard to acquire because a citizen had to first stack merit points in his file. Only when he had enough merit points could he upgrade to the star civilian status.

There were many things people could do to acquire merit points such as volunteering, blood donations, charity donations, technological research, helping police capture fugitives, heroic deeds.....

Jiang Li's brother had very high merit points for helping with police investigations but he wasn't a one star civilian.

Even in school, people with star civilian statuses had the advantage. When school named excellent students and gave scholarships, they would also prioritize these types of people.

On the contrary, if students had a bad record, then no matter how strong they were, they wouldn't be liked by the school. Even Astral University wouldn't take them in. They would instead be surveillanced by the police department for being strong. If incidents were to occur, those with a bad record were prioritized and investigated.

More importantly, one star civilians had the right to purchase cars.

No matter how wealthy normal civilians were, they were not allowed to purchase neither cars nor flying vehicles because vehicles would cause pollution. Without any contributions to humanity, of course people weren't allowed to pollute the environment.

It was a symbol of status now that Jiang Li had the right to buy cars, though he was unable to afford one.

Jiang Li looked at his profile after taking back his student chip. Certainly, he found that there was a star shining brightly next to his societal merit tab. It symbolized contribution, fervor, youth, honor and justice.

"Everything for humanity!" Jiang Li stood straight saluted. High school students were preparatory soldiers after military cadet training.

"Jiang Li, everything for humanity, and we will strive together!" The middle aged police officer also saluted.

Everything for humanity was the catch phrase people used since they

were young. It was a noble ideal and a target shared by the military, police and students.

“Also, Jiang Li, thank you for helping Miss Xue Bear.” A person without a police uniform walked in and came in front of Jiang Li, “I am the manager of the Xue Corporation, representing the Xue family to see you and express our gratitude. Miss Xue was originally planning to thank you personally, however, her spirit was withered after hypnosis and needed treatment. Nonetheless, I represent Miss Xue Bear to give you the Xue family’s token of appreciation, 10,000 star coins. I hope you accept it as a sign of our gratitude.”

As he spoke, a person passed up a card.

On it wrote: Manager, Lightning Dong

10,000 star coins!

The Xue Family was really generous. The police’s reward was only 5000 star coins and that was a very pricey reward already. Yet, the Xue family just gave out 10,000 star coins. For normal people, this was a huge amount of wealth. However, for the Xue family, it was nothing. The space lizard bag Miss Xue Bear bought was worth 100,000 star coins.

Jiang Li was hesitating. He looked at the card they gave and thought it would be better to take it. 10,000 star coins was a large sum. He would feel regret if he rejected it but he still asked caringly, “How is Miss Xue Bear doing? There weren’t any major issues right?”

"Miss Xue Bear was hypnotized by that damned Illusory Fox and sustained major damage to her cerebral nerves. She was sent to the hospital for treatment now, sigh....." Manager Lightning Dong sighed, "We really owe our thanks to you this time, 10,000 star coins isn't something major. After Miss Xue Bear comes out of the hospital, there will be more. If you face hardships in the future, you may come to Xue Corporation. This is our VIP guest card and has my contact details! Hopefully you may consider working at our corporation first after graduation."

He pointed at the card.

This card was a small electronic chip. It could contact the owner of the card through the chip. With the status of Lightning Dong, he would only hand this out to valuable people.

The middle aged police officer looked on at the scene. He knew about Jiang Li's ability through the video and he said in a serious tone, "Jiang Li, hopefully you can enter Astral University. If you can't, the door to our police department is open for you!"

"Yes! Everything for humanity!"

Jiang Li saluted again, "Sir, I will be heading home first. I have one request. I don't wish this to be disclosed to the media."

"You can rest assured about this matter. The matter concerning the fugitive is confidential." The middle aged police officer nodded and watched him as he left the room, "This student will have a successful future."

"I was lucky this time. I can't believe I actually got 15,000 star coins." Jiang Li looked at the manager's business card as he walked out of the hospital. Inside of it was a 10,000 star coins without an account. It could be transferred at any time. He pressed the button and transferred it to his own account and put it away the card. People belonging to these major corporations could be useful in the future.

Soon, he arrived home and no one knew about this.

15,000 star coins were on his card and he needed to consider what he supplements he should buy.

In his room, he opened his student chip card. He pressed something and a screen appeared. There were many pages on it and he browsed through them. He was shopping online.

The student chip card could also be used like a computer. The drawback was that its processing speed was slow, far inferior to some high priced computers and intelligent computers. But it would suffice for online shopping and transactions.

Some expensive smart computers could even model real life scenes such as streets, zombies, and space monsters. It was highly realistic. People could train and kill inside the virtual reality which would greatly improve their physical capabilities and spirit at the same time.

Furthermore, massive online virtual reality games could be played too.

Some online games had extremely high requirements for computers as it had to model many scenarios. Virtual laser projection technology had insanely high requirements on the computer.

Owning a smart computer had long been Jiang Li's dream. Smart computers could connect people's brainwaves and let them enter into virtual reality online games, allowing them to feel the infinite reaching yet different worlds. It was the uppermost spiritual sensation.

However, it was unaffordable.

"Let's see what things I could buy online. The pressing matter at hand is to increase my body strength first...." Jiang Li was searching and realised that many supplements were highly expensive. The cheapest one was Sha Luo meat.

However, the nutrition of these types of things couldn't replenish the life energy expended by Fetal Respiration.

"I think I'll go for the Green God Nutrition Serum. Only the rich can afford these things."

He searched and finally found an item suitable for himself. It was the Green God Nutrition Serum given to him by Miss Blade.

Green God company was humanity's pharmaceutical tycoon. It specialised in producing all sorts of nutritional serums, and supplements but their prices were exorbitant. Green God nutritional serum was 1000 star coins a tube.

A family like Jiang Li's barely touched on the notion of being wealthy. These types of families typically had 10,000 star coins worth of finance. The daily expenditure for the family was only a few star coins. Star coins were very stable and ten star coins could buy many synthetic foods.

If the family had savings of 100,000 star coins or more, they belonged to the middle class. These types of people had moderate expenditure in Xing Hua City, however, they could not afford the Green God Nutrition Serum for everyday consumption.

People who had savings in the millions were the wealthy people. But even so, spending a few thousand a day was also a huge burden.

Only, the millionaires with savings over 10 million star coins could use the nutritional serums to their pleasure.

"Okay, a thousand it is then....." Jiang Li pressed buy.

He bought ten tubes spending 10,000 star coins.

Chapter 14 - Brain of The Universe

Seeing 10,000 star coins disappear from his account, his heart yelped in pain, "God, I spent 10,000 star coins in just a moment. But in order to replenish the lost life energy, I can only spend money. " He was in a state of unbearable hunger every day.

This type of hunger was torture.

However, if he wasn't hungry, that would be worse as it would mean his life potential was being consumed by his cells.

"Rock, you make me hate you and love you at the same time." Jiang Li patted the rock but wouldn't dare to go into Fetal Respiration again.

The delivery for online shopping was extremely fast, he only bought it an hour ago and it was already delivered to the door.

There were tubes of green liquids. It was viscous like algae. When he opened it and smelled, there was a calming aromatic sensation. It wasn't fake.

In the modern human society, fake medicine was basically non-existent. As soon as people were caught producing fake drugs, some would be sentenced to death and others would be exiled to other planets. The latter was worse than death.

There were planets especially for exiled prisoners. It was called Luo Sha. During the day, the temperature was in the high 70s while at night it dropped to minus 30 degrees. The environment was odious and plants had low water content. Prisoners who were exiled there were tortured more by living than death. They lived in perpetual hell everyday.

These types of nutritional serums contained all sorts of nutritions processed by biotechnology. It was absorbed very rapidly. However, people couldn't consume too much as it would result in obesity.

However, Jiang Li didn't not have these types of problems.

He was just absolutely starving and could barely resist himself from eating the glass tube as well.

"I'm about to die from starving, I better eat it!" Jiang Li gulped down one tube and almost immediately felt a warm stream surge from his stomach. The effects were distinctive. The nutritional serum spread to his entire body as his starvation eased.

A 1000 star coin serum was not normal at all.

However, the starvation had not been completely vanquished so he drank another tube. He finished all ten tubes and only then did the starvation ease.

"This is so comfortable, I'm not hungry anymore, damn this feels good....." Jiang Li drank voraciously. His body assimilated 10,000 star coins worth of nutritional serums and now he felt warm throughout his entire

body. He was about to fall asleep.

However, he knew what he had to do and entered into [Crystal Contemplation] immediately. He entered the second stage of Deep Sleep as his spirit glowed like a crystal.

He did not dare to put the opaque stone in his mouth and could only rely on his own spiritual prowess to adjust his status.

In Deep Sleep, the opaque stone emanated a weak white light. With a sudden flit of rustling, he entered the dream state once again.

It seemed that something in the opaque stone was activated by Illusory Fox's spiritual energy.....

"Dreamed for many millenniums, what year is it now?"

Jiang Li fell asleep and entered Fetal Respiration. In his subconsciousness, a voice sounded out again. This was the second time he heard the voice. The first time was when he received the heritage of the opaque stone.

However, there was a new scene in the dream this time.

A voice sounded out .

"All encompassing universe, the cosmos is sacred. It was all a dream, a great dream of realization. Returning to truth is cultivation....."

In the dream, a person appeared.

This person stood in the dream with a calm face saying the words one by one as if he was a teacher teaching a student.

"Fortunate person, you have finally opened the training for the [Great Dream Heart Sutra]. Consequently, I will teach you the cultivation method for this supreme power!"

This person was a middle aged man wearing ancient clothes. He wasn't the white clothed dried body in the sewerage but another person in the dream. He didn't say much and went straight into cultivation.

He sat cross legged in a stable manner with one palm vertical placed in front of him. He had a smile on his face with a peaceful complexion. The other hand dropped, naturally caressing the space.

Jiang Li felt that after this person made this pose, he was fearless of everything and peaceful at heart. He was immune to all terror and evil intent could not rise from his heart. Immediately, he teemed with wisdom.

Subsequently, his hand signs changed like a lotus displaying itself vividly. Sometimes, his hands folded into a fist, sometimes, his fingers joined to form a sword, sometimes his fingers formed a ring, sometimes, his hands touched the bottom..... there were countless transformations.

"Above my head is your version of the brain of the universe.

Contemplation accompanied by actions..... This is the basics for [Great Dream Heart Sutra]! [Spiritual Emperor Seal]! Contemplate the brain of the universe and your spiritual energy will increase."

Above, the middle aged man's head, the vast space of the cosmos appeared.

This galaxies and constellations was highly dense. There seemed to be trillions of planets joined together to form one nebula.

The shape of this nebula was in fact a brain!

The trillions of stars and planets formed a galaxy. The galaxy wasn't like the milky way galaxy but a brain shaped galaxy. The pathways between stars were similar to the ravines of the brain. Each planet twinkled as if the brain cells was operating non stop.

This was the image for contemplation.

This galaxy was many times bigger than the Milky Way galaxy!

"How come I have never seen this big galaxy before? There doesn't seem to be a galaxy in the universe shaped like a brain but each of the planets seem so real..."

Jiang Li asked in his dreams and learned. Humanity's astronomical knowledge was abundant but had never before encountered a brain shaped galaxy. The Milky Way galaxy, the Andromeda galaxy, the Sagittarius galaxy..... there didn't seem to be a galaxy in the shape of the

human brain.

But the middle aged man who was teaching him cultivation did not speed up. He just showed him again and again, "The brain is the soul, the soul is thought, thought is spirit,. Contemplate the brain of the universe. Your brain is the brain of the universe!"

The middle aged man spun on non stop.

As his hand signs changed, Jiang Li saw that this was the surrounding space around the Brain Galactic sector. It was indeed dark. If the brain of the universe suddenly stopped blinking, then darkness and dread would befall.

He seemed to have realised something.

His brain melded in with the brain of the universe. The countless stars were his brain cells operating non stop. If it stopped, his entire soul would disappear and plunge into the darkness of death for eternity.

Suddenly, the dream disappeared.

Jiang Li woke up sweating from his dream.

The scene in his dream was deeply ingrained in the depth of his brain and was inerasable. Every pose and that image for contemplation was remembered as if it were carved into his heart.

The brain of the universe galaxy, that was ten times bigger than the Milky Way galaxy with stars shimmering, was especially deeply etched inside his brain. Every time he reminisced, he felt very dizzy.

“This is the basics for [Great Dream Heart Sutra]? Contemplation of the brain of the universe?”

He woke from his bed and found that he was covered in sweat and smelled horrible. However, his body was extremely lively, as he breathed, he felt that every cell in his body was rejoicing.

He knew his life force definitely reached 0.9.

He reminisced and that dream felt extremely clear. It was also like reality and Jiang Li couldn't help but weave all those hand signs.

He could do it with ease. Contemplating that brain formed by trillions of stars and planets, he moved his ligaments and joined his fingers, hands and spirit. Immediately, he felt his spirit was extremely concentrated.

It was as if all the cells in his brain started glimmering and operating at high speeds.

If his brain was compared to another ordinary brain, then before, it operated at a million times a second, now it operated tens of millions of times per second. His thought processes were ten times faster.

His hand signs were speedy and cooperated with his contemplation.

Suddenly, before a set of [Spiritual Emperor Seal] could be weaved, he felt dizziness in his head and something warm rushed out of his nose.

He stopped weaving signs immediately.

He wiped and found out that it was blood.

His thoughts were blinking too fast and contemplation made his brain receive damage which in turn affected his body.

This was very normal, a person who used his brain to full capacity and was stressed could turn all his hair white in one night. Some scientists who tried to solve problems drowned in deep thought and ended up using their brains too much which resulted in death.

Now, Jiang Li was in cultivation and used his brain too much.

[Spiritual Emperor Seal]. Regardless of the hand signs or the contemplation of the brain of the universe, it wasn't something he could cultivate at his current stage.

"I'm so hungry, why am I hungry again?" He wiped clean his nose and felt his stomach grumble, "I didn't enter Fetal Respiration though, how can I be so hungry"

When he was cultivating just then, he was using [Crystal Contemplation and entered into Deep Sleep. He didn't dare to use Fetal Respiration, but

how could he be hungry so quickly?

“Was it because I contemplated the brain of the universe, and cultivated the [Spiritual Emperor Seal]? Causing myself too much stress?” He still had 5000 star coins but he didn’t dare spend it carelessly so he bought another 3000 star coins worth of Green God Nutrition Serum.

After an hour, the delivery came and he drank another tube as he felt his hunger ease.

“I know.” Jiang Li thought.

He understood that it was because this opaque stone required strong spiritual power to activate.

His own spiritual power was insufficient to activate it but when he fought Illusory Fox, the opponent’s hypnosis technique attacked him but instead opened the [Great Dream Heart Sutra].

However, Illusory Fox’s power was also insufficient resulting in a backlash that blinded him.

“This [Spiritual Emperor Seal] accompanying the contemplation of the brain of the universe is indeed strong. However, it has too much of a toll on my brain and body. My nutrition can’t keep up, god! I have supreme power but I can’t cultivate it!” Jiang Li groaned, “I need money! I need more money!”

Those martial arts that could cooperate with contemplation were

martial arts of a B rank and above.

The most classic B rank martial art was the [Gods and Demons fist]. Each move was used in cooperation with contemplation. The user imagined himself as a demon or god and entered a trance of self hypnosis. Each strike had boundless power like the gods.

However, this type of cultivation could easily cause mental disorders.

Therefore, it belonged to the forbidden martial arts category and schools were forbidden to teach it. Only those who entered the third stage of Deep Sleep could practice it.

High ranked martial arts all required cooperation with contemplation. That was the so called unison between spirit and body.

"I'm so unlucky. I can't use the Fetal Respiration state provided by the opaque stone. I risked my life and using Illusory Fox, I was finally able to open the basics for the [Great Dream Heart Sutra]. Yet, I am still unable to cultivate it. My luck is so bad." Jiang Li suddenly realised that without the support of enough nutrition, the opaque stone was absolutely useless.

He tested again by contemplating the brain of the universe and of course three minutes later, another stream of blood came from his nose as a strong sense of hunger struck upon him.

This situation was only relieved after he drank another tube of Green God Nutrition Serum.

Holding the last tube of nutritional serum and looking at the remaining 2000 star coins, Jiang Li tried to weep but failed to shed a tear.

Chapter 15 - The Arcanum of Hand Signs

He wiped the blood from his nose as he thought about how he should cultivate and earn money. Now, he couldn't enter Fetal Respiration nor contemplation.

The only thing he could practice was the positions of the [Spiritual Emperor Sign] passed down to him in his dream.

These sets of positions were very complicated and were definitely a high ranked martial arts. However, without contemplation, it was just a normal exercise.

Contemplation was training of the spirit. Martial arts without spirit were like empty and useless shells that were only good for show.

However, at least they were positions from the [Great Dream Heart Sutra]. There would be some benefits at least.

He cultivated for a while and felt this [Spiritual Emperor Sign] had a lot of stances. Its secrets lay hidden and even without contemplation, it was still many ranks higher than [Boneless Jujitsu].

The movements and signs were sometimes majestic like lightning striking down, and sometimes they sounded like rain hitting the roof as the fingers flicked multiple times. Sometimes, the fingers formed a flower and spread across the sky. Sometimes, the hand rose like a golden lotus floating to the surface.

In a short while, he was tired and once again entered Deep Sleep.

This time, the dream didn't appear again.

It seemed that Illusory Fox's spiritual energy was only enough for one opening of the [Great Dream Heart Sutra]'s secrets.

An hour later, Jiang Li was fully awake and felt full in spirit. He no longer experienced dizziness and headaches.

He took a shower and changed the bed. He felt refreshed and began to practise his moves at once more. It was the [Boneless Dragon Snake Dance] from the [Boneless Jujitsu]. It could be seen that his body was flexible like it was boneless but at the same time it was filled with tensile strength. His head and legs shook with unpredictable movements like a dragon crossing the skies.

It gave people a sense of a body's absolute limit.

His fight with the fugitive, Illusory Fox, gave him many inspirations. Between life and death, his instincts were activated and he received many benefits and experiences that he was gradually assimilating now.

On top of that, he drank more than 10 tubes of Green God Nutrition Serum which alleviated his hunger and replenished his life potential. As long as he continued using it, the damaged done to him by entering Fetal Respiration would all be slowly repaired.

"Hm? My physical capabilities have increased this much?"

He found that he could do many of the [Boneless Jujitsu] moves with ease, especially the last move [Boneless Dragon Snake Dance]. It didn't feel the least bit rusty.

His physical capabilities, bone strength and tenacity, cell vitality, respiration organ abilities had all improved by a substantial amount. He could do all five moves of the [Boneless Jujitsu] to perfection.

His body improved a lot overall.

Now, he believed that he wouldn't lose to his younger brother Jiang Tao.

Of course, his practical battle experiences may be a little lacking.

"Big brother, you didn't go to class again today?"

There was a knocking sound and Jiang Li opened the door, it was his sister Jiang Xuan.

"I went to class. I just came back." Jiang Li said hurriedly, "Sister come over here."

"Brother, what's the matter?" Jiang Xuan was baffled but still walked into the room, "You bought something from online? What is this? Green God Nutrition Serum? 1000 star coins a tube?" she discovered the receipt

on the table and yelped in shock.

"Shhhhshhhh...." Jiang Li said hurriedly, "Keep your voice down, I went and found a job without telling mum and dad. It was helping the police department search for someone. My luck was good and I found the fugitive's tracks and therefore I got some rewards. Come, take out your student card."

"Okay." Jiang Xuan took out her student chip which was swiped by Jiang Li. Ding Dong, a 1000 star coins were transacted.

"1000 star coins! This is so much money..." Jiang Xuan was flabbergasted, "I... I've never had so much money. I could buy so much stuff." Her monthly pocket money was only 8 star coins.

"Don't let mum and dad know. If you have something you want, just buy it," Jiang Li whispered, "but you must buy things that are beneficial to your cultivation, don't waste it."

"Thanks big brother, you're so nice to me!" Jiang Xuan jumped up and hugged Jiang Li.

Muah!

She kissed him on the cheeks, "I will also become an influential person in the school like brother Jiang Tao."

Jiang Li smiled and nodded, it didn't matter that he spoiled his sister. Originally, he wanted to give his sister some of his left over money even if

he was tight on money.

At night, the family gathered together and ate supper.

Mum, dad, Jiang Tao, Jiang Li, and Jiang Xuan watched TV together and talked about what happened during in the day in a harmonious atmosphere. Jiang Li enjoyed this atmosphere and wanted it to stay like this forever.

"Little brother, how is your stasis going?" Jiang Li asked his brother on the dinner table.

"It's very difficult." Jiang Tao sucked his tongue, "I'm currently starting to learn the ancient yoga signs of Buddhism. It requires you to use your spirit to wield your body and move in accordance with the laws of the universe while conquering your excess thoughts. I'm also cultivating true words, incantations, prayers, and worshipping..." As he put down his bowl, Jiang Li made a movement in which his hands held each other like a fist over his head.

Immediately, Jiang Li felt that his brother was like a massive immovable mountain. It rendered people a peculiar manner on their spirit.

He grasped something after secretly using [Spiritual Emperor Sign].

Jiang Li still couldn't understand the various hand signs of the [Spiritual Emperor Seal]. He could only mimic the moves. He felt that in order to cultivate this set of hand signs, he had to first contemplate the brain of the universe.

Unfortunately, each time he did so, he would have a nose full of blood.

“Eat up, eat up.” Jiang Zhendong knocked on the bowl and chopsticks...

After dinner, Jiang Li came to the park again to feed cats. He could see that Big Black was strong in physique. However, he did not feel happy but rather sorry for it. Big Black’s current condition was due to the hypnotism of the stone. That was overdrawing its life potential which meant that its lifespan would be greatly reduced. It was unknown how many more months it could live.

He wanted to earn money but right now it was impossible for Big Black to also have a Green God Nutrition Serum.

Big Black didn’t feel the danger and was very happy as he played around everywhere. He became the king of the cats and even the Striped King was subservient to it.

After Jiang Li finished feeding the cats, he began his cultivation. Naturally, it was the newly learned [Spiritual Emperor Seal]. He weaved signs continuously and moved his body in stances. After he finished a set of signs, he was already sweating heavily. It was a huge consumption on energy.

He went to rest once again. After 1 hour of Deep Sleep, he opened his computer and searched for information.

“SSRO.....” He opened the computer and searched for it. Immediately, a

lot of information came up.

“Illusory Fox’ almost killed him and this memory was still fresh. That person’s power also deeply shocked his spirit. Especially Illusory Fox’s hypnosis techniques, it felt unstoppable. Imagine being stared by him once and you would be hypnotized. What did this mean? It was possible to make you give your bank account password, or even do transactions.

According to people, Illusory Fox used this to hypnotise many wealthy people making them do transactions for him and afterwards, it was impossible to investigate who did it. It was because the person hypnotized didn’t even remember that event.

Miss Blade said that if he wanted his spiritual cultivation to progress one step higher, he had to learn hypnosis. Before, he felt that hypnosis was nothing but a trick to fool people. But after his contact with Illusory Fox, he felt that this hypnosis technique had unimaginable uses.

When foxes hypnotized humans and made illusions in the ancient times, the people hypnotized thought that they met beautiful ladies. However, they were actually hypnotized.

And the story of “Huang Liang Yi Meng’ was also caused by ancient hypnotists.

At the same time, Jiang Li also searched online the organization that Illusory Fox was in for what is actually was.

The so called SSRO was a group of people nostalgic for their countries

and wanted to recover the honour of their countries.

When humanity united and entered the galactic era, it was unstoppable. The era of the countries was abolished like the slave and feudalistic era. Recovery of that was like pushing back history.

Humans were now strong and made many settlements on planets. However, if they encountered a strong civilization in the universe, they would be defeated easily without a doubt. Soon, they would be massacred to extinction.

In the year 2050, a alien spaceship fell onto the earth. If it didn't suddenly crash land, the humans of earth would have been completely conquered as slaves.

Up until now, the technology acquired from the spaceship was still under research as it wasn't fully researched. All people in the governing body capitalized on unity and did not allow acts of mutiny.

"Even though it was the SSRO, there were many types. Illusory Fox had Caucasian lineage. However, the Xing Hua City we live in now belonged to China 200 years ago.

Looking at the information displayed on the screen, Jiang Li's eyebrows frowned.

200 years ago, the earth had America, China, Russia and many powerful countries in Europe. After the world war, the governing heads joined together and formed the new Earth government. The countries

disappeared.

The Xing Hua city Jiang Li was at belonged to China and he was a pure blooded Chinese.

Asians also had SSRO groups hidden undercover and they were really strong.

However, he was disinterested in these organizations and did not want to encounter them. Jiang Li knew that he was an insignificant figure and needed a harmonious societal environment to become stronger step by step. This way, he could acquire higher status and let his family live happily.

Peasant's do not care about the king's problems.

He wasn't in the position to worry about those things.

"Hypnotist, hypnosis....." Jiang Li thought of Illusory Fox's hypnosis techniques and felt that he should study some knowledge regarding hypnosis. Hypnotist was a rather lucrative career in the modern day.

"How do I learn hypnosis..." He searched online.

"Hypnosis is a form of spiritual control. Hypnotists must have a strong spirit and then follow through with language, actions to release his influence creating a strong connotation which make the target's mind subject to your influence. Ultimately, you control their subconsciousness....."

"Hypnotist certificates are divided into Apprentice Hypnotist, Elementary Hypnotist, Secondary Hypnotist, Tertiary Hypnotist, Super Hypnotist and then Spiritual Master."

"Apprentice Hypnotists don't have a high salary. Normal students can learn hypnotic techniques. A regular hypnotist was different. They had to undergo many strenuous exams before obtaining their certificate. Elementary Hypnotist could cure many diseases and allow people to sleep peacefully and even make them go into Deep Sleep! Of course, Elementary Hypnotists' personal spiritual cultivation had to be at the second stage of Deep Sleep. The monthly salary of an Elementary Hypnotists was usually 10000 to 100000 star coins...."

The information online displayed one by one.

Jiang Li browsed, "What? Elementary Hypnotists' monthly salary is this high? I'm currently at the second stage of Deep Sleep, does that mean I can become an Elementary Hypnotist?"

Chapter 16 - Learning Hypnotism

The day after Jiang Li arrived at Miss Blade's office.

"Miss, I want to learn hypnotism, but communal learning programs are too expensive. Where do I go if I want to learn it myself? Could you teach me some hypnotism tricks for free?" Jiang Li blurted out his words all at once.

Miss Blade gave him a glance. "You couldn't be thinking of becoming an Elementary Hypnotist to earn money?"

"That's right miss."

Jiang Li wanted to learn Hypnotism, but having researched online he found out that typical lessons had a starting fee of more than 3000 star coins. It was extremely expensive. Even downloading videos that taught Hypnotism was costly.

In the modern society, copyright protection was bullet proof. Products of stolen ideas have become near extinct. Trying to find stolen videos online was practically impossible.

It was especially so for martial arts and spiritual training education. Each video required a fee to be obtainable.

Usually martial arts videos were quite cheap, but it is hard to gain

anything useful from them. Hypnotism however was a different matter. The fees were extremely high. Yet just learning hypnotism online was not sufficient, for there also needed to be practical experimentation, with a teacher on the side to give one-on-one coaching.

"Indeed you can learn hypnotism, for you're at the second stage of Deep Sleep in spiritual cultivation. You'd be stronger than most Apprentice Hypnotists, and possibly even have the right to become Elementary Hypnotists. But possibilities remain possibilities; hypnotism is not that easy to learn. Innate talent is imperative." Miss Blade continued, "Do you even know what Hypnotism is? Tell me your thoughts."

"Hmm, basically it is to make the other party sleep, then tell them to do what you want." Jiang Li responded, "Hypnotism can cause great damage to one's brain, but it can also heal psychological wounds."

"This is a very basic understanding."

"Sit down." Miss Blade commanded.

"Yes miss!" Jiang Li crossed his legs and sat down.

"To be honest, just then you have been hypnotized by me," Miss Blade said.

"How is that possible?" Jiang Li felt that he was completely in control. "I haven't been hypnotized?"

"I told you to sit down and so you sat. Subconsciously you have obeyed my commands, is that not hypnotism? In the three realms of the spirit,

the body and actuality, my heart cannot control your body; but it can control your heart." Miss Blade droned, "You have to understand the basis of hypnotism. I'll teach you the most basic hypnotism right now."

Whilst speaking she took out a watch and opened it. The minute-hand made tick tock sounds, and accompanied by her swaying, the office suddenly fell silent.

"Slow your breathing, and follow the rhythm of my clock. Relax your body, and imagine yourself on the surface of a giant rock, with the full moon casting long shadows in the woods. The wind blows gently, and at the base of the rock a stream slowly trickles, everything is tranquil..."

Jiang Li followed Miss Blade's instructions and tried to picture the scene whilst breathing in the rhythm of the clock. Sure enough after a while he felt dizzy, as if he was about to sleep.

"No! If I were hypnotized, wouldn't my secrets be exposed?" Jiang Li clenched his teeth to bring himself out of that state. He could not risk getting hypnotized, for he might blurt out things about the [Dream Heart Sutra].

"You've resisted my hypnotism." Miss Blade saw that Jiang Li had become clear-headed again. "But, do you now understand how hypnotism works?"

"A little bit," Jiang Li thought for a moment, "It seems to be the utilization of language, limb movement to relax the opposition to make them sleep. However, if I did not follow your instructions, such as mirroring the rhythm of the clock, or imagining the scene with rocks and

trees, wouldn't the hypnotism fail?"

"If it was an Apprentice Hypnotist, of course it wouldn't work. Apprentice Hypnotists can only make people follow their rhythm of life." Miss Blade sneered, "However it's a different matter with Elementary Hypnotists. Even the worst Elementary Hypnotist can alter someone's rhythm without help. This is the difference between the two; one needs assistance whilst the other doesn't."

"Miss, are you a hypnotist?" Jiang Li asked.

"Of course, I'm an Elementary Hypnotist. Otherwise how could I afford all this furniture?" Miss Blade gestured at the Aromatic Scale Wood around them. "I charge star coins in the thousands every time I hypnotize someone. Why would I rely on the marginal salary of the school?"

Elementary Hypnotists can make a person enter Deep Sleep.

Zhang Yue had hired such hypnotists, and paid quite a hefty amount for each session. In the long-term, as he slowly grasped the rhythm of Deep Sleep, he gained the ability to enter it without assistance.

In the contemporary society Hypnotists were warmly welcomed.

Hypnotists, not apprentice Hypnotists.

"What is the rhythm of life?"

Jiang Li asked a crucial question.

“Good question!” Miss Blade raised her eyebrows, and it was as if killing intent emanated from her. “The rhythm of life is a very... mysterious thing. It requires a very perceptive mind to master. The rhythm of life includes breathing, the heartbeat, the pulse, and even neuronal fields of the brain. It can be said that it is the frequency of the magnetic field generated by life. If it were an Apprentice Hypnotist that has not yet entered Deep Sleep, such words are meaningless, but you’re different, as you can enter the second stage of Deep Sleep at will, indicating you can calm yourself down.”

Jiang Li sort of understood what Miss Blade said.

“You still do not understand the rhythm of life. Here’s a simple example. Before battles army generals would give a speech, using passionate language to sweep the soldier’s into frenzy, a bloodlust that turns them into fearless warriors. This is a type of hypnotism. Hypnotism is using a perceptive heart to grasp the rhythm of life of the opposition, and using language and limb movement, to create a similar frequency which sedates the opposition’s mind into your control.”

“Things like this need to be demonstrated by teachers. Online videos are useless, because everyone’s rhythm of life is different, like fingerprints. Every hypnotist needs keen perception to control the rhythm, such in the instance I hypnotize you.”

Miss Blade suddenly started to sway with the clock, and at this very moment the rhythm of the lock beat the same as Jiang Li’s heart, pulse and breathing.

Jiang Li thought that the clock had an indescribable allure to it.

He quickly tried to refocus himself and change his breathing pattern

But the rhythm of the clock slowed down as well, and at the same time a hypnotic tune came out of Miss Blade's mouth, a lullaby. After hearing the notes, Jiang Li felt drowsy and could not concentrate.

"[Crystal Contemplation]!"

He immediately entered the state of [Crystal Contemplation], and his heart followed in suit to become pure like a crystal. Outside influences could no longer reach him.

"Huh? [Crystal Contemplation]?"

Miss Blade sneered again, and suddenly uttered a word. "Hou!"

Jiang Li felt his eardrums shake and his whole body turn hot, immediately pulling him out of the state of pure thought. The syllable was like a concussion instrument right above his head, making him feel like an animal frightened by lightning, not in control of his own body.

Afterwards, almost subconsciously, he looked towards the source of the sound, to see Miss Blade raise her hands and suddenly drop them, forming a seal like a flower. Together with the hand movements a surreal sheen glazed over Miss Blade.

His eyes were immediately captivated by the sight, and his breathing, heartbeat, pulse and mind aligned with the movement of the hands. His visions started to blur, and a voice whispered into his mind. "You're tired, sleep. Take a nap, and there shall be no more burden."

"True....True..." Jiang Li responded unbeknownst to himself, "One should sleep if he feels tired. I should sleep..." But deep down his subconscious was screaming at him. Do not sleep! You cannot sleep!

But, it was futile.

Even [Crystal Contemplation] was ineffective.

His spirit was about to slumber, drifting into a bottomless abyss.

Suddenly, a flash of thought jolted his brain. As if grabbing onto a life-saving ledge, the contemplation of the brain of the universe emerged in his mind, and his brain cells immediately became hyperactive after visualizing the pattern.

He opened his eyes, his vision full of vitality and vigor.

But afterwards blood trickled from his nose and he got a headache.

"You could resist my [Secret Sect Hand] hypnotism?" Miss Blade stopped the hypnotism and showed surprise, "Your blood nose indicates brain cell damage. What did you contemplate that made your cell activity

exceed its limit?"

"It's nothing to worry about." Jiang Li's interest was in fact roused, "Miss, what hypnotism hand technique did you use?"

"Simple hypnotic techniques would not work on you. I used the true words of the Secret Sect to shock your mind into immobility, and then used [Soul Seal] on you." Miss Blade still could not hide her amazement at Jiang Li's accomplishment, "I can enter the third stage of Deep Sleep, hypnotizing you should be within my ability. How could you remain conscious?"

"Everyone has their little secrets." Jiang Li lowered his head.

"Ye and I can't be stuffed asking." Miss Blade waved her hand, "Your secret is at the expense of your body, please don't use it brashly."

"Miss, please teach me the secrets of that hand sign!" Jiang Li hurriedly blurted out in an attempt to strike the iron whilst it's hot. Though he had learnt many things, the only thing he could train was the [Spiritual Emperor Sign], and it was without contemplation.

"The hand sign is very intriguing. In Buddhism the hand symbolized the heart. I'm sure you've heard about the phrase "the ten fingers connect the heart". Whilst forming a hand sign the heart and fingers become aligned, representing communication between the heart and physical world. It's just like the Three Realm Theory. You must firmly grasp this concept." Miss Blade was earnestly trying to educate Jiang Li, "However, the hand sign is just like B rank martial techniques; every move must be paired with contemplation. At your current cultivation level, hand signs do not have much practical use, unless you enter the third stage of Deep Sleep."

"Yes miss."

Jiang Li nodded his head, however he was still thinking about the [Spiritual Emperor Seal].

Afterwards, Miss Blade carefully explained the different ways to perform hand signs, the theories behind it, and how to combine it with hypnotism. At last she made a comment, "To be honest, hypnotism is using one's own heart to crush others, but this power is used via mediums such as such as limb movement. Within limb movement, hand signs are the unequivocal best, and that's why hand signs are the best way to hypnotise people. Clocks are an example of mediocre ways."

"Heed this, the most important thing about hypnotism is first grasping the rhythm of life of the person. This must be done with your own innate talent and perception. Secondly, you must release your spiritual powers via limb movement and sound, creating a captivating atmosphere. Third, choose the right moment to crush the person's spiritual barriers. After mastering these three key steps, you should become a qualified hypnotist."

Jiang Li nodded his head slowly. "Ahhh it's so hard to grasp the three steps though. There are few that have truly master them."

"Of course. Entering the third stage of Deep Sleep is already hard, but becoming a hypnotist is even harder. Though being able to enter the second stage of Deep Sleep means that your spiritual power isn't bad, you do not know how to utilize it. Spiritual powers cannot be used like pure brute force. But hey, even brute force needs to be utilized via

mediums such as martial arts.”

Miss blade’s explanation was simple.

Even if a person was physically extremely capable, his power can only be utilized via martial techniques. Without them he’d be just like a brainless ox.

Similarly, if a person has a strong spirit, he needs to learn to project them outwards.

The projection of physical power is easy, however the projection of spiritual power is on a whole new level of difficulty.

“Jiang Li, there's one more key point! This is the most important aspect, and that is you must learn to smile,” Miss Blade counselled. “Smiling is the most basic extension of spiritual power. A person that shows a heartfelt smile on his face can easily sway other’s emotion, and make them smile as well. Smiling can make people trust you. Imagine if you had a cold poker face, people’s first impression of you would be of dislike. Thus, your chance of a successful hypnotism is also lowered.”

Releasing spiritual power starts with smiling.

Having heard this, Jiang Li had a revelation. He finally understood what it meant by limb movement, and how spirit power is projected,

This, was the most easy and basic notion.

"Also Miss, last question," Jiang Li asked, "Does the soul exist?"

"You've asked a wrong question." Miss Blade responded. "The soul is your mind, your spirit, how could it not exist? Does the soul exist after people die is what you should have asked. The spirit is metaphysical; to manifest upon the physical realm it requires the the body, the bridge between the realms. If the bridge falls, the soul once more returns to the Void."

"Understood." Jiang Li gained a deeper insight of the spirit.

Chapter 17 - Spiritual Emperor Seal

"Hai!"

Jiang Li held one hand into a fist and another like lightning. He appeared ferocious as if the thunder god was raging. When he made this hand seal, he didn't contemplate but felt himself become a bolt of lightning piercing the skies and reaching out into space.

"Ha!"

His hand seals changed as the two fingers combined like the gleaming edge of the blade. It was as if he transformed into a furious wind. His breathing was unpredictable like the wind blowing over the earth.

"Ti!" His hand seals changed once again and his fingers expanded outwards, like rain hitting the big leaves nourishing all things. He himself turned into a pouring rain splitting himself into billions and dropping like rain drops.

"Hong!" His hands were like a mountain, rising up high yet the manner of his hand signs changed itself once again and turned into a high reaching immovable mountain.....

These was the many transformations of the [Spiritual Emperor Seal]; the ligaments and the brain constantly interchanging, using the spirit to control the body and emanating different mannerisms.

He listened to Miss Blade's class and received private lessons from her while studying hypnosis techniques and hypnosis theory closely. After he went home, he then thought about it carefully and searched online for specific hand signs such as Buddhist hand signs, Taoist's five thunder seals, praying for rain seal, Christian prayers and all sorts of religious customs.

Although his studying capabilities weren't as good as during Fetal Respiration, the second stage of Deep Sleep was still very strong. It made him think fast and gave him strong memory.

He didn't dare use Fetal Respiration and didn't try contemplating the brain of the universe. After coming back from Miss Blade, he drank the last tube of Green God Nutrition Serum and felt his brain cells being replenished. Only then did his headache ease. However, he only had 1000 star coins left and all the other supplements had been used up.

Good thing was, if he could become an Elementary Hypnotist, he could earn money really fast. Disregarding other things, just being able to assist people into Deep Sleep could earn him more than 1000 star coins each time.

The monthly salary of an Elementary Hypnotist hired by large companies was usually between 10000 to 100,000 star coins. This was a huge amount of money, otherwise, how could Miss Blade be that rich?

Unfortunately, those who could reach the second stage of Deep Sleep were few in quantity. Those who could become an Elementary Hypnotist were even more rare.

Every Elementary Hypnotist was an important person.

The market supply and demand was large as well because too much people want to enter Deep Sleep.

As long he could pass the test for this occupation, there was no need to fret for a source of money.

The more hand signs Jiang Li knew about, the more he realised that [Spiritual Emperor Seal] was probably an unparalleled art. Now, he didn't contemplate the brain of the universe but practiced hard every day and felt that every hand seal represented something. However, the [Great Dream Heart Sutra] stone didn't activate so he couldn't learn the subsequent content.

Good thing was, as he trained, his agility had increased significantly. He even made huge improvements in both the [Boneless Jujitsu] and the [Dragon Claw Subjugation].

At the current stage, [Spiritual Emperor Seal] could not yet be used in battles and was purely for show. However, it was good for improving the body's agility but Jiang Li could feel that as long as he had sufficient nutrition while incorporating the contemplation of the brain of the universe, the magical abilities of this set of hand seals would be fully excavated.

On top of that, he used this set of hand seals as body language and hand signs for hypnosis. He experimented with it repeatedly.

The experimental subject weren't humans but cats.

The homeless cats in the park.

When he was training, the litter of kittens were rolling around and playing on the sides. Flower faced overlord sat on a stone beside the pond as he looked at one of the big golden fish swimming around. He was up for a try.

Every time Jiang Li saw this scene, he felt it was hilarious.

Flower faced overlord was watching the fishes in the pond for more than a few days and spent a large amount of time each day on sitting on the stone trying to catch fish. However, he didn't dare to.

Jiang Li felt that if it went down, it would probably have been eaten by the fishes as a few golden fishes were larger than the flower faced overlord.

Huala!

A fat gold fish jumped up and splashed a face full of water onto the flower faced overlord.

Puupuu..... the flower faced overlord spat out water in fury as he shook in anger. Even his fur spiked up but that fat gold fish was still swimming idly and blowing bubbles like it was mocking the flower faced overlord

for its inability.

The flower faced overlord faced the fat gold fish and hated it to its bones but still could not do anything. Finally, it gave up and returned to the shore with its head sagged down. It laid down lazily bathing in the sun to dry its body.

"Flower faced overlord!"

Jiang Li called out.

Pada pada..... the flower faced overlord jumped a meter high feeling happy as he thought that Jiang Li was going to feed him.

Jiang Li's spirit was immeasurably concentrated and could feel flower faced overlord's life rhythm; the breathing, heart pulses and even brain waves. He clearly felt that flower faced overlord was disappointed because it didn't see food.

"He looked at my hand?" He felt these emotions and calculated some adjustments. It was as if he grasped the trick to hypnosis slightly.

His hand started to shake in accordance to flower faced overlord's life rhythm. It became increasingly faster making many more gentle positions as if flower petals falling from the sky.

This was a position from [Spiritual Emperor Seal] which looked like flower petals falling from the sky.

Jiang Li cultivated for a long time and felt that if this stance was fast enough making people's eyes blurry and head dizzy, then it should be useful for hypnosis. Furthermore, hypnosis didn't use a set stance. It could be as simple as waving your hands, making a cup of water, breathing, singing, or swaying watches. As long as you could control their life rhythm and create a resonance.

Of course, as soon as this hand stance was made, flower faced overlord opened its eyes wide and suddenly wobbled around as if it were drunk.

Poof

The flower faced overlord fell to the ground and went to sleep heavily.

Jiang Li went up and patted the hair on its body. Then, he adjusted his spirit and caressed it peacefully. This was the starting hand stance for [Spiritual Emperor Seal].

The starting hard stance of the person in the dream was with one hand erect and the other one touching the skies. It rendered people a feeling of extreme tranquility and harbored sagacity in the moment. It extinguished the inner demon, destroyed abomination and maintained justice in the human realm.

When Jiang Li was patting, he passed on the tranquility in his heart to the sleeping flower faced overlord.

The other person's spirit could be felt upon physical contact.

For example, if a person patted gently, the gentleness in his heart could be felt. But If the person patted hardly, the brutality in his heart could be felt.

As expected, flower faced overlord's breathing calmed down as if Jiang Li actually quelled its inner demons and fears. It slept very soundly and peacefully. Jiang Li could tell in one glance that it had entered into Deep Sleep.

Humans had researched the physical traits of Deep Sleep very thoroughly. There were even specialised detection equipment.

The physical traits of those in Deep Sleep were unique. This could be seen from breathing, heart rate, pulse.

"I actually succeeded! I hypnotized a cat into Deep Sleep. This is the secret of the [Spiritual Emperor Seal]!" It was his first time succeeding and he felt excited on the inside. Hypnotising a cat into Deep Sleep, this was the ability of an Elementary Hypnotist and that represented money rolling towards him.

Not only those students who were keen on improving this physical capabilities but also many wealthy people desired for a good sleep everyday to stay in good spirits. Therefore, many wealthy people wanted to hire Elementary Hypnotists.

However, the ability to hypnotise a cat didn't mean the ability to hypnotise a person. Cats were lethargic animals and had a spirit many times more pure than humans.

He was in deep thought for half an hour. He was exploring the secrets of the [Spiritual Emperor Seal].

After he gathered some experience, he wanted to conduct another experiment.

"Flower faced overlord, wake up...." He patted the flower faced overlord and it rose up looking full spirited. It stared at Jiang Li with its eyes in surprise.

He quickly weaved signs again with his hands. The speed exceeded the limit of his normal training speed as his hands formed into many beautiful stances. As expected, flower face overlord's eyes starting becoming obscured and suddenly fell into snoring.

"Both attempts were successful?"

Jiang Li stared at his hands in shock. He was finally certain of himself, "This seems to be the ability of Elementary Hypnotists? A monthly salary of 10,000 star coins is waving its hands to me, ha."

"I'll go back and do an experiment to see if I can also hypnotise people into Deep Sleep."

Cats had a simple mind but humans had a sophisticated mind. Hypnotising cats were much easier than hypnotizing people.

He placed the sound asleep flower faced overlord into its warm home and left some food behind for it before returning home.

He opened the computer once again learning the knowledge of hand signs. He had learnt a lot recently and felt that the [Spiritual Emperor Seal] stances he was practicing seemed to be full of transformations. Even hand stance was a profound hypnotizing move.

Now, he had discovered that falling flower petal move could make a cat sleep while the gentle patting the space move could make a cat calm down and enter Deep Sleep.

As for whether or not the results were the same for humans was still to be determined.

He studied for another few hours and read more than twenty electronic books in order to fully understand the knowledge of all sorts of hand signs.

He read all of the knowledge in ancient sutras such as [Controlling Pathway], [Lotus Heart Pathway], [Tai Cang Fen Zi Ci Di], [Tai Cang Bei Zai Ci Di], [Great Solar Sutra].....

When Jiang Li read books, it was one scan a page but he would remember the whole page. Following with a slight analysis, he would produce the knowledge points. He read with an incredible speed.

There were hundreds of thousands of ebooks on the computer and he finished reading all of them mastering the essence immediately.

Before, when he read a book, it took him very long and he had to try hard to memorise. That study efficiency belonged to the stone ages.

Without noticing, a whole day passed like this.

The ancient hand sign opus, the modern opus and the psychology opus were abundant like the ocean. People couldn't fully learn it even in a lifetime. Jiang Li only scratched the surface even after such long time of hard work.

"Big brother, you're back? Did you not go to class today?" The sky was dark and sister Jiang Xuan came back first.

"Ye, I was doing important things at home." Jiang Li signaled for his sister to come, "I was studying hypnosis recently, can you be me experimental subject?"

"Haha! Big brother don't play jokes, how can you hypnotise me, you can try." Jiang Xuan laughed.

"Okay then, you watch me." Jiang Li took out a clock and swayed it side to side, "Focus your spirit and watch the clock move. Do you feel very sleepy? Do you want to sleep? Look at your surroundings, sapphire mountains and emerald waters, the cool wind blows..." As Jiang Li concentrated his spirit, he swayed the clock controlling his sister's life rhythm.

"hahaha..." Jiang Xuan looked for a while as if watching a monkey

dance. She then started laughing, "This is hypnosis? You're hilarious big brother. I wasn't affected a single bit."

"It's because you're not cooperating. Hypnosis requires cooperation, you need to imagine with me together." Jiang Li shook his head. Just at this moment, Jiang Xuan's alert was lowered and he suddenly weaved signs. His hands were gentle sometimes and were strong and fast other times. His fingers danced in an elegant manner as if flower petals were falling from the sky. Instantly, Jiang Xuan was dumbstruck and looked dizzy in her eyes.

Chapter 18 - Sleep Test

Hula.....

Jiang Xuan's eyes started to blur and her body swayed side to side as she watched his hand signs.

Jiang Li weaved signs incessantly and started to increase his speed. His sister started to shake her head trying desperately to stay awake. However, it was like she was drunk and couldn't focus her spirit, though she still didn't fall asleep.

"Sleep, sleep, sister, have a good sleep and you will feel refreshed. You will enter Deep Sleep." Jiang Li had a light smile on his face, his voice sounding gentle to maximize his spiritual influence in order to break his sister's spiritual defense. He really wanted his sister to have a good sleep deep down inside his heart.

Half an hour later, Jiang Xuan finally fell onto the bed and slept soundly.

"I finally successfully hypnotized her!"

Jiang Li gasped for breath as sweat covered his body. His eyes felt starry as his stamina was severely deprecated. It was very easy to hypnotise flower faced overlord but he almost couldn't continue when he tried to hypnotise his sister. Half an hour of push and pull made his spirit feel very wasted.

However, he still couldn't relax yet at this moment.

He gently patted his sister's head using the [Spiritual Emperor Seal]. With a doubt, Jiang Xuan's breathing stabilized and her complexion was getting calmer by the moment. Jiang Li smiled and allowed her sister to know through spiritual patting. His sister was also smiling sweetly in her sleep.

When his sister went to sleep, Jiang Li himself also entered Deep Sleep to recover his stamina.

He recovered after a full hour.

Jiang Xuan was still asleep so he took out the sleep detector immediately,

"Life signs stable, brain activity calm, sleep quality, rating 98, excellent quality!"

The detector displayed a set of data and gave the final rating.

Modern technology could test the quality of sleep. Normal sleep was usually 60 and which counted just as a pass, good was 70, great was 80 and excellent was 90.

100 points was Deep Sleep, and it was the full rating.

Jiang Li's current sleep quality exceeded full rating and was off the

charts. This was the case even when he didn't use the opaque stone because he could enter into Deep Sleep at any time. Compared to those who had to practice zen breathing and be directed for a long time before entering Deep Sleep, his spiritual mastery was greater by a lot.

If there had to be a test, his sleep quality should be close to 200.

Of course, it was something that his sleep detector couldn't detect. It couldn't be detected unless he had a more advanced equipment, however, that was very expensive. His current detector was prevalent for the public like the thermometers before, and countless people had it. It wasn't a very high tech piece of equipment.

"Little sister's usually sleep quality is 70, good. Now she jumped straight into 98 excellent quality sleep. It can be seen that my hypnosis has been useful." He researched online and found out he still wasn't an Elementary Hypnotist as he couldn't hypnotise people into Deep Sleep. Therefore, he still had to work hard to master the techniques of hypnosis.

Elementary Hypnotist could hypnotise people straight into 100 quality Deep Sleep. That was guaranteed over 1000 star coins of remuneration.

"Still, I must work hard. I must hypnotise people into Deep Sleep, otherwise, Apprentice Hypnotist is worthless." Jiang Li shook his head, "Unfortunately, when I cast [Spiritual Emperor Seal], I can't contemplate the brain of the universe. Otherwise, my brain cell activity would be ten times greater and the power of this hand sign would also be many times stronger."

In the process of hypnotizing his sister just then, he seemed to have

discovered a deeper level secret to the [Spiritual Emperor Seal].

The sky was pitch black.

Jiang Xuan waked up from her sleep feeling extremely comfortable throughout her body, "Big brother, I fell asleep so heavily this time." She rubbed her eyes and jumped of the bed.

"Look at your sleep data."

Jiang Li showed the detector to her.

"Woah!"

Jiang Xuan jumped, "My sleep quality was actually 98, excellent quality! I was only 70 before. Big brother, did you really do this?"

"What else do you think it would be?"

"We're rich, we're rich, you can become an Elementary Hypnotist and we'll be rich." Jiang Xuan counted her fingers, "Elementary Hypnotists are significant people, and are human shaped note printers."

"There was too much difference between 98 and 100. I'm only an legitimate Elementary Hypnotist if I hypnotise you into Deep Sleep." Jiang Li browsed his computer searching for all sorts of hypnosis records.

“Oh yea, big brother, where did you learn this set of hand signs from?”

“I was browsing blogs online and saw someone post this set of hypnosis techniques and contemplation image so I studied it immediately. Unfortunately, the post was deleted very quickly and I wasn’t able to save it.” Jiang Li had already thought of an excuse and decided to use this for other occasions too. The internet was developed and had all sorts of wonders. The excuse of an occasional finding could be used to dispel all doubts.

If things like people’s bank account details being spilled online due to hackers attacking banks could happen, then why couldn’t it be possible to learn something from online?

Jiang Li told his sister to go study after talking to her for a while and then he proceeded to calm down and study hypnosis techniques.

Subsequently, he trained [Spiritual Emperor Seal] arduously every day in order to study hypnosis.

And he used his little sister as the experimental subject.

This was killing two birds with one stone because his sister could receive very good sleep therapy while he could familiarize with his hypnosis techniques.

As his cultivation was become more experienced, the hypnotic effect of [Spiritual Emperor Seal]’s hand signs were getting better and better. Every night, his sister Jiang Xuan received his hypnosis. With the help of

the detector, it was found that sleep quality gradually increased from 98 to 99.

This small bit of difference represented an increased quality of sleep.

This was very scary data.

If there were incense in the family, Jiang Xuan could very well go into Deep Sleep everyday.

In the park, Jiang Li was with the group of homeless cats. After feeding the cats, he started cultivating again. He trained in [Spiritual Emperor Seal] and then proceeded to hypnotizing big black, flower faced overlord and big meng...

[Exploding Military Fist Thrust]!

After practicing, he tested his physical capabilities. Although he was obsessed with learning hypnosis techniques these few days, brawling techniques couldn't be left behind.

There before he began to use the simple [Exploding Military Fist Thrust] to test out his physical capabilities. This was a simple set of boxing martial arts but it had extremely strong offensive power.

It was pure fist thrusts.

Step in fist thrust

Step out fist thrust.

Side step fist thrust.

Consecutive fist thrust.

Anyone could thrust their fists. It was as simple as holding a fist and thrusting outwards. It was the most simple yet basic move in boxing. However, the key word in [Exploding Military Fist Thrust] was exploding.

Hitting out air explosions in the moment of a thrust.

In consecutive fist thrust, the more air explosions you could hit out, the stronger one proved oneself to be. Even strong people with a life force of 1 could only hit out twenty or so consecutive air explosions.

Jiang Li wanted to see how many air explosions he could hit out.

Peng Peng Peng Peng.....

He thrust his fists consecutive like a hand blade. One fist one thrust. His body moved in and out as he pleased. One explosion!
2.....8.....10.....18 explosions!

On the 18th air explosions, he was breathing heavily and exhausted.

‘I’m so tired. Didn’t think I could hit out 18 air explosions in one go. Looks like my life force has been increasingly steadily recently. But without the support of nutritional supplements, it was useless no matter how hard I trained.’ Jiang Li looked at the balance on his card, it was less than 1000 star coins. That wasn’t even enough for one tube of Green God Nutrition Serum.

Earning money seemed necessary.

Jiang Li rested for a bit and went into deep thought.

Go for another mission at the police department?

It was pointless. Last time he was lucky and met Illusory Fox. He couldn’t guarantee he had the same luck every single time. Usually, missions from the police department gave very little in reward. Instead, it wasted time on cultivation.

Looking at his account repeatedly, he wished that there could be a few extra zeros behind his balance.

Suddenly, another card went into his eyes.

It was manager Lightning Dong’s chip.

Suddenly, a thought crossed his mind: “Right! I’ll go find that manager of the Xue Corporation. With my current hypnosis abilities, I can definitely find a good job. I may not be an Elementary Hypnotist but I’m a very strong Apprentice Hypnotist.”

At that time, he saved Xue Bear once and that manager said that he was welcomed to work at the Xue Corporation at any time.

Although those might just be hospitable words, with Jiang Li's current ability, he had worth no matter where he went. Even if he didn't save Xue Bear, he still believed that he would be favoured by the major corporations.

Beep Beep Beep....

The card vibrated and light rays projected the holographic image of a person.

Jiang Li dialed the number on the card.

The card itself was a communicational device and could go straight to the manager of the Xue Corporations.

The person who appeared in the rays was the manager. When he saw Jiang Li's face a smile appeared on his face immediately, "Jiang Li, hello. Thank you for rescuing Miss Xue Bear last time, what do you need me for? I'm Lightning Dong."

"Manager Lightning, hello, how is Miss Xue Bear? Has she recovered?" Jiang Li asked calmly, first greeting, then proceed into the topic.

"Sigh....." Lightning Dong shook his head: "She was forcibly hypnotized

by Illusory Fox and sustained spiritual damage. She is still recovering now and haven't been able to express her gratitude towards you. Please forgive her."

"Oh?" Jiang Li learnt large amounts of hypnosis knowledge and knew that Miss Xue Bear must have sustained spiritual damage. This was considered a spiritual disease and was hard to be remedied. Although modern technology was greatly advanced, there wasn't much it could do for spiritual diseases. Suddenly, a thought crossed his mind. He didn't mention finding a job and said suddenly, "Manager Lightning, maybe I could be of help."

As soon as he finished, there was a subtle look of contempt of Lightning Dong's face. He thought Jiang Li was bluffing and attempting to tufthunt by trying to get close to Miss Xue Bear. It was foul play but he remained courteous, "Jiang Li, we have asked many specialists but they were able to treat her, some of them even included Elementary Hypnotists. Your good will is heart felt but with regards to treating Miss Xue Bear, I believe there won't be much you can do."

At that instance, Jiang Li felt that this tone was stiff but he didn't mention it, "I have stared with Illusory Fox and he tried to forcibly hypnotise me. He was unsuccessful. I have researched hypnosis to a large extent and have also learnt it. I believe it will be of help to Miss Xue Bear."

"Okay....." Lightning Dong suddenly shook and remembered. On the day of the incident, he rushed to the police department immediately and used all his connections to get to know about the situation. Only then did he realise that the situation was very bad. In the end, Illusory Fox lost sight in both of his eyes. It was cerebral nerve damage and it was highly liked that it was related to Jiang Li.

He was brought to immediate attention with these words, "Jiang Li if you can help cure Miss Xue Bear's condition, our Xue Corporation will thank you greatly. However, in order to cure this condition, we have inquired countless psychologists and hypnotists but still, it was of no use. If you really had a way, we will satisfy anything that you ask of us."

Chapter 19 - Curing Xue Bear

"I know this and I am confident. After all, I'm the only person that wasn't hypnotized by Illusory Fox." Jiang Li tried to secure his chance first.

He understood negotiation tactics.

After all, he only saved Xue Bear once and the Xue Corporation gave him 10000 star coins in gratitude. They didn't owe each other favours.

"Come to the top of the building, I'll send someone to pick you up." Lightning Dong said immediately, "Report me your position."

"Okay!" Jiang Li quickly sent out his position.

Half an hour later, at the top of the building, he saw a flying vehicle that came from the distance and parked on top of the building. It was much larger than typical buses and was a brand that only the wealthy could afford.

"Is it Jiang Li?" A study youth in black with shades jumped down from the vehicle.

"I am Xue Feng, here to pick you up." Xue Feng had a very wild temperament. It could be easily seen that his life force was extremely strong. He was only 27 to 28 years old. He reached out his hand.

Crack crack.....

Immediately, his hands felt like they were crushed by strong pincers.

“Testing me?” Jiang Li smiled and didn’t move his arm. He unwrapped his fist and secretly used a hand technique of the [Spiritual Emperor Seal]. His fingers moved and deep down inside the joints of his hand, there seemed to be the sound of lightning. It was like the ancient martial arts [Palm Lightning].

There were many connections between the hand techniques of [Spiritual Emperor Seal] and martial arts. It was powerful and if it could be incorporated into martial arts, it would harbor unimaginable power. However, Jiang Li has only scratched the surface and couldn’t apply it in battle.

Buzzzz...

Xue Feng’s arm felt sore and released immediately. His reaction was extremely fast, for otherwise his whole arm would be pulverized.

“Very strong!” Xue Feng’s face changed, “Is this really a high school student?” He was 27 and Jiang Li was 17. He had ten years more of hard work in cultivation than Jiang Li. On top of that, 27 was when the physical ability was at its climax. If Jiang Li was also 27 years old, how strong would he be then?

“This person’s life force should be about the same with Zhang Yue, probably belonged to the higher class in the society.” Jiang Li quickly

determined Xue Feng's ability.

"He is very strong." Xue Feng's face was cold, "Jiang Li, get on."

After walking onto the flying vehicle, the door was shut. Shooo! The vehicle ascended and drew out a white line. The facades below gradually faded away. In no time, it left the urban areas and reached the suburban areas. This was where all the wealthy people's mansions were.

Some wealthy people even owned a whole mountain. There were blue mountains and green waters, a truly prosperous sight everywhere.

Before, a yardstick for wealthy people was owning their private mansion. But now, the real wealthy people possessed their own mountain and built their mansion on top of it. There were park slots for flying vehicles and cars. Some of them even had artificial waterfalls.

[ED Note: Fuark... Am I the only one in awe of the future?? This future looks sick]

Every plutocrat who owned their own mountain would have assets of over 100 million in worth. They wouldn't live in the clamorous city.

Each mountain was tens of kilometers long. Some peaks were completely artificial, even the trees, water, fountain were all artificial.

In the country era 200 years ago, humans started filling the ocean to build houses much less now. Nowadays, humans had stepped out of their home planet. Technology was sophisticated and therefore building these

artificial sceneries was a piece of cake.

Humans were the great spirit of nature, turning the rivers and controlling the seas.

It was night time but every mountain was bright with lights. The brightness wasn't any less than that of the city and large amounts of energy were being consumed.

Before, it was real estates building houses. Now, it was land estates building mountains and selling them to plutocrats who set up their own decorations. The reason that plutocrats loved buying mountains was because when the character for human and mountain combines, it created the character for immortal.

The flying vehicle arrived at the top of a mountain. Jiang Li could see that whole mountains had been decorated and there were platforms and pavilions everywhere. Flowers bloomed exuberantly and a large science fictional building was erected at the top of the mountain. At there, people could stand above the mountains. There were also fountains and water flows in all places. The flowers were aromatic and the birds chirped joyfully. There were also management personnel.

For this mountain, there were at least a few thousand managing personnel. That was equipment to a large company.

"This is where the plutocrats live."

Jiang Li said in exclamation as the flying vehicle descended. It parked

on the giant parking platform and immediately, there were people coming to greet them.

It was manager Lightning Dong. It seemed that his position in Xue Corporation was quite high.

"Jiang Li, are you really confident that you can cure Miss Xue Bear?" He didn't waste his time saying useless things and went straight to the topic as soon as they met.

"What's Miss Xue Bear's condition? Does she show signs of panasthenia, insomnia, incessant nightmares and spiritual fatigue? Even sleeping pills are ineffective?" Jiang Li asked.

He had read many hypnosis books and was extremely familiar with all the relevant knowledge. He knew what the symptoms of the damage caused by forceful hypnosis were like.

"Yes, you're right." Lightning Dong said immediately, "Miss Xue Bear's symptoms are exactly so, especially insomnia everyday. Even with the use of sleeping pills, she still wakes up from nightmares. She is very emaciated."

Panasthenia, insomnia and incessant nightmares; these were all spiritual illnesses and was very hard to cure. Modern medicine was very effective in curing physical illnesses but was extremely lacking on the curing of spiritual and psychological diseases.

"In that case, I simply need to let Miss Xue Bear have good sleep quality

everyday so that her own immune system may improve....." Jiang Li thought in his mind.

Looking at his confidence, Lightning Dong was dubious, "Then I'll take you to see Miss Xue Bear."

"Please lead the way."

In no time, they arrived at the mansion on the top of the mountain. Floating lifts brought them to the top floor.

This was a very spacious room. The four walls were made from special glass. People could see what was outside clearly but people from outside couldn't see a thing in the inside.

This view made all the other mountains seem insignificant.

The layouts in the room were very warm. There were cartoon figures in some places and the room had a slight aromatic smell. When Jiang Li came in and smelled the aroma, his spirit immediately shook.

There was a study table in the room which had a wooden incensory on it. Inside, a golden stick of incense was burning. This incense was highly expensive.

"Golden Snake Incense"

This type of incense cost thousands of star coins for just one gram.

It was made from the bladder of a monster called Golden Snake which came from a unique planet that humans had conquered. It was only seen in the elite district and its function was to settle the spirit and supplement the brain. It could even assist people to settle down in spiritual training and render them a chance to break through into Deep Sleep.

A young girl laid on the bed. She had deep eye sockets with an emaciated face. Periodically, she grabbed her quilt with her hands showing uneasiness.

This was Xue Bear. It was almost like she was another person from the prosperous looking girl on the other day.

"Big sister, don't be afraid, I'm here." Inside the room, there was a young girl aged 17 to 18. Jiang Li couldn't see clearly as she had her back to him but her figure could be said to be perfect.

"No.... I'm scared, don't come over, don't come over." Xue Bear was covered in sweat and had just woken from her nightmare. Her breathing was weak and her spirit was abnormal.

"Why did you people come in?" The young girl heard a sound and suddenly turned around, "Don't you know my sister needs rest?"

"Liana Xue? It was Liana Xue? One of the four goddesses of the school."

The four goddesses of school were too famous.

Lara Luo, Yelanie Lu, Liana Xue, and Sarah Yun.

Each of them were beautiful like a goddess and their families were all plutocrats with assets worth hundreds of millions. On top of that, their grades were very good. Whomever was able to successfully court them could work 100 years less.

"Miss Liana Xue, this is Jiang Li. He saved Miss Xue Bear from Illusory Fox when he participated in a mission from the police department." Lightning Dong explained: "This time, he is here to see Bear's condition. He said he has a way of curing her."

"Jiang Li? You can cure her?" Liana Xue stood up and examined him coldly, "I heard about your little brother Jiang Tao. He's a genius, but apparently you are just so so. You were lucky when you saved my sister. Don't even think about trying to find an opportunity to get close to my sister. I'll make it simple, how much money do you want?"

"Miss Liana Xue, I don't understand what you're talking about." Jiang Li was very calm. He understood what Liana Xue meant, she was saying that he is leeching onto their family.

"You don't understand?" Liana Xue sneered, "You little brother is courting Yelanie Lu just to get some resources. I know the situation in your family. You two brothers are not much different. You seize an opportunity and try so desperately to climb. However, fate coincidentally brought you to save my sister. I will still give you money but don't think about any other ideas. My sister is already pitiable enough, you still want to utilize this opportunity to get close to her?"

Jiang Li wasn't angry after hearing Liana Xue's blunt tone, "You think that I'm using this opportunity to climb?"

"If that's not the case then what is?" Liana Xue raised her head, "We don't know how many hypnotists, psychologists and medications our family has used for my sister's condition and none of them worked. You can cure her? Who do you think you are? Your life force grades in the school seem to be 0.7."

"You're right to doubt me." Jiang Li smiled, "How about this, let's make a bet. If I can't cure Miss Xue Bear you can do whatever you want with me. If I can cure her, you must agree to a condition of mine."

"Do whatever I want with you? Liana Xue scanned her eyes, "This is a legality society, could I possibly kill you?"

"Is this the 0.7 life force of mine?"

Jiang Li simply flicked one finger and reached out with his hands and quickly grabbed. It was like flower petals descending from the sky blurring people's eyes with the after images it created. Just looking at the hand gave people a sense of dizziness.

"Hm?" Liana Xue was finally moved. Just then, her spirit actually fumbled for a moment. She only recovered after secretly biting her tongue, "This is a hypnotic techniques?"

"Correct!"

Jiang Li was also surprised. The hand technique he used just then was a hypnotic hand technique from [Spiritual Emperor Seal]. His fingers wobbled consecutively creating a scene of flower petals falling from the sky. It was magical and even Liana Xue lost herself for a bit.

It could be seen how strong Liana Xue's spiritual prowess was.

It was quite possible that her spiritual status was the same as his, Deep Sleep stage two.

After all, Liana Xue's life force was top ten in the school. It reached 1 and was way above his.

Although he didn't hypnotise Liana Xue just then, he revealed to her his abilities.

"Okay, if you can cure my sister, I can give you a large sum of money." Liana Xue looked at her sister with love, "My sister is very pitiful, if you harm her, I won't let it go easily even if it means breaking the law."

"Why would I harm her?" Jiang Li said, "I have used this hypnotic hand technique on my own sister as an experiment. It is very safe and now my sister's spirit is getting better and better. Furthermore, you guys will be looking from the side when I cure Miss Xue Bear. What could possibly go wrong?"

"Okay then, begin." Liana Xue rushed, "Hopefully your treatment can make a difference."

Chapter 20 - The hand sign goes, the illness dissipates

Jiang Li nodded his head and walked to the bedside, "Miss Xue Bear, I'm Jiang Li. That day you saw me."

"It's... you. I remember you, I wanted to thank you but I've been sick the whole time. If it wasn't for you I can't imagine what the criminal would have done to me." Xue Bear looked very feeble, however she was still courteous, and presented herself as a gentle and well-mannered young lady.

"No need to be tense. I've come today to help fix your problem, please believe in me." Jiang Li also wished to save this girl from suffering.

"I believe you," Xue Bear's body moved a bit, as if grasping onto the last straw that will save her, "How should I cooperate in your therapy?"

"What's the quality of your sleep right now?" Jiang Li asked.

"Very bad. Almost 0 every night," Liana Xue got out a measuring instrument, "Nightmares throughout the whole night, with incessant activity from brain cells. Even Elementary Hypnotists could only raise my sister's quality of sleep to 20."

A sleep quality of 60 passes the threshold; 20 was extreme sleep loss.

A sleep quality of 0 was basically slow suicide.

“Have you not attempted to hire Secondary Hypnotists?” Jiang Li asked.

“Secondary Hypnotists?” Liana Xue shook her head, “It’s not that easy, for there is none in the whole of Xinhua City. We must try from outer regions. A few days ago we did get in contact with one, but he is busy with something else and can’t come.”

Even the lowest of Secondary Hypnotists could enter the third stage of Deep Sleep, Statis. After long periods of training, they would be powerful men that could transfix people with every movement. These type of people were inherently rich, and thus why would they be hired for hypnotism so easily? Plus inviting them was a fee in a caliber of its own. The most important thing was, they reside in the army working for the government, and would hardly come out.

Though the Xue Family were plutocrats, inviting such people was still not easy. Getting in touch with a Secondary Hypnotists was lucky enough.

Jiang Li knew his capabilities.

His current hypnotic powers were not enough to heal Xue bear’s spiritual damage.

Illusory Fox’s strong mental stimulation had made her suffer from nightmares every day. Apprentice Hypnotists were in no position to help, as it was very likely Illusory Fox was a hypnotist close to Secondary Hypnotists in power.

However, if he risks it, and contemplates the Brain of the Universe whilst

performing the [Spiritual Emperor Seal], there was still hope.

The [Spiritual Emperor Seal] was already amazing without contemplation. If it were done together with contemplation, what would happen?

Jiang Li could not imagine the effect, and so he wanted to experiment.

Of course, he was not willing to damage his brain cells, and so he made a few requests.

"Liana Xue, when I apply therapy it is very taxing on my brain cells and spirit. I hope you can supply me with some high-grade nutritional supplements."

"That is of no problem." Liana Xue gestured at Lightning Dong, "Go and get some Green God Nutrition Serums. If you can truly heal my sister, I'd even give you Lunar Essence.

"Lunar Essence?"

Having heard this, Jiang Li licked his lips.

In ancient times there was a term called 'Solar and Lunar Essence'.

Modern technology has discovered what it was.

The gargantuan Sun and Moon Corp specialised in high-tech biological technology which would make medicine based off emission rays inside of the moon. People can receive life-changing benefits after consuming the condensed physical form of these type of rays.

People feel refreshed after basking in the light of the moon. This was due to the reflected sun light and the inherent emission rays, which put people to peace.

The Sun and Moon Corp have used modern technology to produce the mythical Solar and Lunar Essence.

Of course, this essence also created hallucinations within people. Just like a drug, it was very possible to become addicted. The addiction was also many times stronger than normal drugs, and thus this essence could only be consumed whilst the recipient was in Deep Sleep.

There were none in proper markets for it was a banned substance. Only in black markets could it be purchased.

Green God Corp was a branch of the Sun and Moon Corp, showcasing the power of the latter.

On the black market Solar and Lunar Essence cost at least 150,000 star coins per bottle.

The essence could be split into two categories; Lunar Essence and Solar Essence.

Lunar Essence could be consumed as long as the recipient could enter Deep Sleep. Solar Essence, however, required the recipient to be able to enter the third stage of Deep Sleep.

Even with wealth Jiang Li could not purchase them. He must brave the dangerous Black Market to get his hands on them.

A short while later, Lightning Dong came back, carrying with him dozens of nutrition serums. He also brought a little box, and within there was a small bottle with clear liquid that shone brightly. Jiang Li thought he saw moonlight sealed inside.

"This is Lunar Essence? So pretty!" He silently admired.

"This bottle contains Lunar Essence. 10 grams, 150,000 star coins," Liana Xue commented, "I can give you 1 gram now, mixed with other serums to supplement your body, and make sure your at peak condition. This way you can go full out in your treatment of my sister. However, you must sign this contract. If you can not heal my sister, you must pay for the loss."

"Ok."

Though the conditions were a bit steep, Jiang Li still decided to gamble.

Liana Xue took a drop of Lunar Essence and mixed it with another nutrition serum, passing it to Jiang Li.

"Give me the other thirty or so serums as well." Jiang Li was very direct,

and poured all the nutrition serum in a nearby cup.

"Your not scared of overdosing?" Liana Xue was shocked, "This... No matter how much stamina you expend in a day, a bottle of nutrition serum is sufficient."

"Don't worry about this. I've signed the contract right? If something happens to me it's not your fault." Jiang Li gulped the liquid down like a pig. Glug glug glug...

He immediately felt a strong sensation circulating around his body, as if he was about to burst.

It was a like a person on the brink of starvation saw delicious food; consuming mouthfuls which would result in death.

If it was anyone else that did as Jiang Li did, they would definitely overdose, and suffer from kidney failure, and possibly even necrosis. All sorts of diseases would erupt, because consuming nutrition serums was not the same as eating food.

But Jiang Li was different. His life potential had been severely depleted, and was in need of replenishment. The more he drank, the more his life potential would recover.

The damage Fetal Respiration had done could only be remedied via large amounts of nutrition serums.

Sure enough, after drinking it down, he felt his bodily cells wriggle and absorb large amounts of nutrition. He did not feel any discomfort, in fact

he felt extremely good. A cool chilly sensation that travelled up to his spine brought him to a climax, a pleasurable domain which made him want to dance with the wind.

“Must have been the Lunar Essence, however the hallucinations are pretty strong. Brain of the Universe, contemplate!”

Jiang Li quickly started to contemplate, and as expected his brain cells were ten times as active. He did not get a blood nose this time.

Large amounts of nutrition were being digested, and white vapour arose from Jiang Li's pores. This was the whole body in cellular respiration.

“Miss Xue Bear, look at my hand?” Jiang Li suddenly bellowed, like a roaring lion - majestic and righteous.

Xue Bear was surprised and her mind shocked into excitement.

Jiang Li suddenly started to perform the hand sign, like a butterfly flying amongst flowers, bringing about a touching charm.

Xue Bear's eyes became transfixed.

Her breathing also became steady,

“Huh?” Liana Xue also stared at Jiang Li as she wanted to see how he would perform therapy. She didn't expect him to suddenly form quick

hand signs that were extremely beautiful, and could not help but be transfixed, her mind attracted to it.

“What a strong hypnotic hand sign.” She wanted to see the style of Jiang Li’s hand sign, but as soon as her pupils are fixed in it her mind became involuntarily drawn to it.

She quickly closed her eyes, and did not dare to look at it again.

But, the wind that came from performing hand signs still reached her and made her feel as if she was being hypnotised.

“What? Sound hypnotism!?” She was shocked, and only felt a bit better after covering her hears.

Zzzzzzzzzzzzz...

After half an hour, the sound stopped.

She opened her eyes to find Jiang Li sweating heavily, his body spent. Xue Bear was sleeping, her life signs peaceful; long and steady breaths, heartbeats, pulse movement.

“No way.”

Liana Xue was a strong character, and could be ranked in the top ten of the school. She was proficient in every subject, and knew life signs inside out.

"Everytime my sister slept, her breathing was rapid and her heartbeat and pulse fast. The nightmares were chipping away at her spirit, yet it is now so steady..." She grabbed a measuring instrument and moved closer to her sister to test it.

No long after a line of words appeared on the instrument. "Life Signs steady, Quality of Sleep: 100."

"Deep Sleep!" Liana Xue was extremely pleased, "This is practically a miracle! A secondary Hypnotist had said that my sister suffered from nerve damage, and healing the damage done by Illusory Fox via hypnotism was impossible. How did you do it?"

Jiang Li merely smiled. This time he went all out, and the speed at which he formed hand signs was fast than ever. Coupled with his contemplation, it formed a strong charm that attracted Xue Bear into thinking about it over and over.

The initial stance of the [Spiritual Emperor Sign] symbolized an immovable mountain that pierced the skies and touched the heavens. When Jiang Li first saw it, he felt at peace, and felt that misfortune, evil, horror would never befallen him. It was like a giant Buddha that warded off all evil, giving people a sense of security.

Jiang Li critically trained this technique, and had since gained a similar aura and charm which could be effectively projected into a person's mind.

Though he had not been practicing hypnotism for long, if he were to take the test contemplating the Brain of the Universe, without doubt he would pass as a secondary hypnotist.

"Miss Liana Xie, your sister's condition is a product of exposure to horror. Her mental state is very weak. Now that I've hypnotised her, there shouldn't be anymore problems." Jiang Li looked at Xue bear's life signs, "Soon, she will wake up. Let's go out so as to not disturb her."

"Ok ok ok..." Liana Xue almost cried tears of joy.

"Phew, [Spiritual Emperor Seal] indeed had the power to get rid of dreadful feelings and steady the nerves. The first attempt was a success..." Jiang Li also let out a sigh of relief.

Chapter 21 - The underground black market

The duo exited the room. Lightning Dong was prancing about outside, his heart restless as he was scared that something would happen. "Miss Liana Xue, how is it?"

"It's very good! My sister is sound asleep," Liana Xue replied. "You can go now, I'm going to talk with Jiang Li privately."

"Yes miss!"

Lightning Dong was thrilled and showed great excitement, as it was he who introduced Jiang Li, which counted as a major contribution to the Xue household. They would treat him well.

"Jiang Li, I really have to thank you his time." Liana Xue rubbed her eyes, and felt happy after seeing her sister sound asleep in the room.

"Don't celebrate yet." Jiang Li was solemn. "After a few hours, when Miss Xue Bear wakes up, give her an examination. As the psychological wounds were very deep, she might need me to continuously hypnotize her in order to fully recover."

"Of course," Liana Xue was most welcome to this suggestion. "Tell me your price."

"Not much really," Jiang Li replied. "This time I legit just wanted to find

a job, and came to visit Xue Bear after hearing that her conditions have remained the same. It is coincidence that I just learnt hypnotism, which seemed to have a great effect in the first treatment. As long as you supply me with nutrition serums every time, I will come. Just pay me the same amount as other Secondary Hypnotists.”

Jiang Li was perfectly logical and reasonable.

He wished only to gain money through his hard work and craft, which benefited both parties.

It was a dignified and upright way.

“You want to earn money?” Liana Xue’s eyes beamed. “Where did you learn hypnotism? Can’t believe you hid such talent!”

“Online, however the post has since been deleted.” Jiang Li thought up a random excuse.

Liana Xue continued, “How about this. You saved my sister, so I’ll give you 100,000 star coins. Come here every day in the following weeks until my sister is completely recovered, and the nutrition serums required will be supplied by me.”

“That is in my best interest!” Hearing the proposal Jiang Li was elated.

100,000 star coins was a huge sum of wealth for Jiang Li.

He could now buy countless supplements and medicine.

“With 100,000 star coins, I could even go to the black market to purchase some banned substances!”

Jiang Li thought to himself.

The black market was quite complicated. It was an intricate network specializing in selling weapons, mechs and even banned substances that came from the Elite District. Rumor had it that with enough money, even Genos Liquid was obtainable.

This was an illegal market, but behind the scenes powerful men of the army spearheaded the illicit trade.

However, the black market was not located in Xinghua City but rather another place called Xuhua City. This city was extremely turbulent and contained harmful radiation, a remnant of World War Three. Though reforms had lessened the radiation quite considerably, the government was still unwilling to set up a government branch there.

Over the course of time, the city had become riddled with good and bad people, and the legal system quite corrupt. It formed the black market.

All cities that had ‘Hua’ in its names were part of ancient China.

Researching online, Jiang Li had already been drooling with envy at some of the prohibited substances available at the place.

“I’m going to rest for a bit, as I’m dead tired from prior.” Jiang Li sat down and started to condition himself. As it was a safe location, he

gradually entered Deep Sleep.

“Damn, able to enter the second stage of Deep Sleep at will? There are no more than ten people at the school that possess such spiritual prowess. I wonder how strong he is in combat.” Liana Xue was surprised, and waited patiently.

Two hours later, a voice came out of the room. “Liana, Liana...”

“It’s sister! Sister’s awake!”

Liana Xue rushed into the room at great speeds. Jiang Li noted this and recognized her physical strengths.

The moment Xue Bear woke up, he also opened his eyes.

Though he was in Deep Sleep, he had a spiritual awareness of what was happening in the outside world. Even the movement of a blade of grass would have rendered him in flight.

“Liana Xue’s life force is above me, indeed worthy of a plutocrat. Sigh, having this many resources at your disposal is so good. ”

The duo entered the room. Xue Bear propped herself up, and it could be seen a lush red color was on her face, a sign of good blood circulation.

“How was your sleep sister? Did you have any nightmares?”

“None, I slept like a log.” Xue Bear was in good spirits. “I’m a bit hungry, could you get me some porridge.”

"Ok, I'll get it immediately." Liana Xue was overjoyed. "Man, this is the first time you've said you're hungry in days."

"This snooze felt great. My spirit has recovered considerably." Xue Bear looked at Jiang Li, "Thank you Jiang Li, however it will take a while for my illness to recede, I'm scared that the next time I sleep will revert back to the old pattern."

"Don't worry, I know hypnotism." Jiang Li smiled. "Trust me, after a few weeks you will recover. I guarantee your health will be better than ever."

"I'm really grateful," Xue Bear's eyes showed relief. "I'm no longer scared of nightmares plaguing me."

Dadada...

Footsteps came from outside, and Lightning Dong entered the room. "Miss Xue Bear, you've awoken?"

"Mr Lightning, I feel much better." At the same time, a waitress carried porridge served in an intricate bowl. The rice was like red jade, each glistening, with a pleasant and light aroma that stimulated people's appetite.

This was the expensive 'Red Jade Rice', which was not sold in kilograms but grains. Each grain was worth more than ten star coins.

Xue Bear slowly started eating, and not long after the bowl was depleted. She yawned and stretched, indicating she was in good spirits.

"It has taken a turn for the better! To think she'd recover after fruitless attempts by many Hypnotists and Psychologists. I wonder how happy the President would feel. I'll tell him immediately." Lightning Dong was eager.

"Wait up Mr Lightning. First, get 100,000 star coins and transfer it to Jiang Li. This was the treatment fee. We can tell my dad when she has completely recovered."

"Yes Miss."

Mr Lightning hurriedly went to transfer the money.

Jiang Li didn't say anything. He would accept the transfer, for it was natural to get paid for treatment. If he did not, it would instead make people question his motives.

"Cheers." He took out his student chip. Soon after, the sum of 100,000 star coins entered his account.

To the Xue Corp, 100,000 star coins were merely a few high-brand bags.

"Miss Liana Xue, I've accepted 100,000 star coins as the fee for the treatment of Xur Bear." Jiang Li stated seriously. "This is part of the process. Shall we see the effect after a few more treatments?"

"Ok!"

Liana Xue thought for a moment. "I entrust everything in your hands."

"Don't worry. I'll come once every day until she fully recovers."

Jiang Li did not feel guilty in taking the 100,000 star coins. Of course, he would be diligent in healing Xue Bear. In the process he would also gain a lot of experience hypnotizing, and enjoy the abundance of nutrition whilst contemplating the Brain of the Universe, helping him break through plateaus in [Spiritual Emperor Sign] and contemplation.

At home.

On the holographic computer, lots of data was being processed.

Jiang Li was staring at, and researching about the black market in Xuhua City. A large amount of info appeared, many about disconnected and random things.

Some were selling weapons, others hiring hit men, killers, Hypnotists. A few people were looking for medicine. There were even underground rings and gang recruitment...

The info was a mess.

At the very least however Jiang Li saw many requests for secondary hypnotists, each paying a hefty amount.

In conclusion, the black market was filled with chaos, ambition and potential. It was paradise for criminals.

Of course, it also had substances unobtainable in normal markets.

“Huh? Lunar essence is so expensive! To think it’d be 150,000 – 180,000 for a bottle of 10 grams. A person that had purchased it got robbed after he left the place.” Prohibited substances could not be mailed, for if caught the sender would be convicted as a drug dealer.

To buy them, one must physically collect them face to face in the black market.

“I’m not rich enough to buy Lunar Essence, so I’ll probably look for other alternatives that raise brain cell productivity and increase life potential, which is also within the 100,000 price range.”

Jiang Li searched every website.

Suddenly, a suitable prohibited substance entered his vision.

It was a blue injected serum that scintillated brightly.

“Super Protein Gene Invigorator!”

Jiang Li’s eyes went wide open. The description said that after injecting the substance, it would increase one’s immune system and cell productivity whilst recover lost life potential, slow down aging, excrete poisonous waste and adjust internal secretions. However, as the substance is very powerful, it would cause neuron damage and thus only

those able to enter Deep Sleep could use it.

Frankly, most prohibited substances all had strong medical properties, and would all cause neuronal damage. Some, after injection, strengthened one's body but also caused excruciating pain, whilst others would give great pleasure, and thus could easily addict the user. Both instances would cause mental damage, and only those with a strong spirit could consume them without side-effects.

Super Protein specialized in raising cell productivity.

Jiang Li looked at the description, and then researched info on Super Protein. Turns out the substance was best injected into people in the third stage of Deep Sleep, where they could practice the [Drunken Fist] to disperse the medical properties. This was the most efficient way of absorbing the substance. Otherwise cells would not be able to consume that much nutrition and in fact age faster, causing a chain of damage and deteriorate the liver.

An overabundance of nutrition was more dangerous than being deficient in nutrition.

Too much nutrition would cause things like diabetes, high cholesterol, coronary diseases and stroke. Too much protein would also increase the burden on the vital organs.

Normal people that injected Super Protein would bloat up, and very quickly lose all organ functions and die.

How many people could reach the stage of the [Drunken First]?

And so whilst this substance was expensive, the prerequisite for injection was also high.

"It should be okay. I don't run the risk of an over abundance of nutrition, in fact I'm lacking in things that will boost my life potential." Jiang Li set his mind. Though he had not reached the third stage of Deep Sleep, he'd never been abundant in nutrition. "I'll find a time to travel to the black market and buy Super Protein."

However, he needed to prepare prior to going there, and not get so cocky. Having researched online, it was apparent there were many gangs and cults in the black market, with almost no police. A lot of people lose their life savings after going there, and women suffered a worse fate. There were plenty of instances of women getting raped.

But since there were many prohibited substances sold on the streets, people still flocked there. Some corporations could only get banned substances via the black market.

"I'll go to the black market after healing Xue Bear first, empowering myself with her family's nutrition serums."

Chapter 22 - Zheng Wenbing

In the exercise room at school, Jiang Li couldn't help but be surrounded by students as he trained, like stars around the moon.

He had made himself a reputation after fighting on equal terms with Zhang Yue.

"Brother Jiang, since your physical capabilities have grown a lot recently, want to test how strong your punches are?" A male student flattered.

His name was Li Dong, with a life force of 0.8, which was considered outstanding in the class, top of the crop. However it paled in comparison to Jiang Li and Zhang Yue.

It used to be that many people wanted to suck up to Zhang Yue, however, Zhang Yue cared not for little characters, and Jiang Li was much more amiable and easy to approach.

"Ye Jiang Li, let's test your physical capabilities."

A few girls chimed in, chattering away.

Before, they would have paid no attention to Jiang Li, but now they had also crowded around him. Jiang Li recognized that power brought status.

Guo Meng also received attention, and felt great about himself.

"Ok, I'll try it."

Jiang Li walked in front of a measuring instrument.

It was as tall and wide as two people, with a sandbag connected to a holographic computer that could accurately calculate the force of a punch.

Hai!

Jiang Li was relaxed as he made a slashing gesture at the sandbag, creating air ripples. Halfway upon impact he formed a fist at a speed that was visibly unfathomable. His hands struck the sandbag with great force.

"Fist Power: 0.8 tons!"

Numbers appeared on the holographic screen, with an A.I voice declaring the stats.

"Wow! 0.8 tons!" A girl started to scream.

"Zhang Yue only have 0.76 tons when he tested... So basically Jiang Li has surpassed Zhang Yue in terms of fist power?" Li Dong was shocked, but he didn't show it. His suggestion to test Jiang Li's power was to see how strong the latter had become, but he never thought it would exceed

his expectations by this much.

A point to note was that Jiang Li had not used his legs to propel himself in the punch. If solely by fist he could reach 0.8 tons, it was scary to imagine what would happen if he had given it his all.

Jiang Tao could reach 0.9 tons. Jiang Li could easily as well, as long as he used his full power.

But this simple punch gained Jiang Li considerable prestige amongst the crowd.

It needed to be said that in the class of more than 4000 students, most only had a punching power of 0.4 tons. A few outstanding students could reach 0.5 tons. The results of countless tests were that no one had passed 0.5 tons yet.

Looking at the numbers, Jiang Li was pleased. It seemed that after the fight with Illusory Fox and training [Spiritual Emperor Seal], not only had his physical capabilities increased, but also his coordination as well. The next time he met Zhang Yue he would beat him to pulp.

"Strange, class captain Zhang Yue is not at class today?"

Many students wanted to see what would happen in the next confrontation between Jiang Li and Zhang Yue.

"Zhang Yue only befriends the school's elites. He doesn't bother with anyone with a life force below 0.9."

"I reckon by the time exams come around, brother Jiang's life force would be 0.9 for sure. He'd also be one of the school's elites."

"Zhang Yue will no longer be arrogant."

Everyone gossiped.

"Let's start training boys. Come ask for if you need any help or don't understand something.' Jiang Li was different to Zhang Yue. He was very friendly, and had a good relationship with others. He didn't act haughtily, and thus after a few days he had become a leader in the class.

"Ok brother Jiang!"

"Brother Jiang is such a good friend! If other people bully our class, hopefully brother Jiang can flatten them out."

"That's right. Our class is quite weak amongst the cohort, and so we get bullied often. Zhang Yue didn't care about us, but finally brother Jiang has come around."

The girl's buttered Jiang Li up.

"Bro, you're quite successful right now," Guo Meng walked towards Jiang Li and whispered. "I think a few chicks are interested in you. Getting them would be breeze. Wanna' create an opportunity for your brother and leave me one? I feel so bad about the fact that I'm still single in year 12."

"Kill yourself," Jiang Li bantered. "Feeling bad? It's the last year of high school. Work hard now. Once you get a good grade in the final exam the university chicks will be for your picking."

As they talked, all students were training in the room, using every ounce of energy and sweat to pound and fight.

Ping!

The door was kicked open, the sound carrying across the whole room. Every student looked towards the door.

A student appeared at the door. He was 1.9m in height, with a flawless stature. His handsome brows carried a sense of authority.

"It's Yang Wu of Class A, with a life force of 0.9. He's placed 37th in the school's tests, even above Zhang Yue. What's he doing in our class? Class A is known to be the strongest class in the cohort."

Yang Wu was one of the strong men of the school. He exuded pressure as soon as he entered the room. The room quieted down, and no one knew what he was doing here.

"Who's Jiang Li?"

Yang Wu raised his heads and scanned the area.

"Looking for me?" Jiang Li furrowed his brows, and took a step forward.
"What's up?"

"You're Jiang Li?" Looking at the 1.8m Jiang Li, a look of disdain crossed Yang Wu's eyes.

"Brother Bing wants to see you. Come with me."

Jiang Li used to be 1.75m. After these few months of training, coupled with large amounts of nutrients and changing internal secretions, he had become a lot sturdier, stronger and taller. He was 1.8m right now, but was still a bit below Yang Wu's 1.9m.

"Brother Bing?"

Jiang Li remembered that Brother Bing was famous in the school. The guy's full name was Zheng Wenbing.

"What does he want with me?"

"Don't ask. All you need to do is come with me." Yang Wu gestured with his fingers. "I'll take you to him."

"Don't go bro." Guo Meng stepped up. "He might fuck you up. If you are going to go, the whole class will come. We won't make it easy for other classes trying to bully us."

"Ye Brother Jiang, we'll come with you!" A few students yelled.

"No need, continue your training." Jiang Li waved his hands. After confronting Illusory Fox, and the subsequent life and death struggle, he now looked at many things lightly. What could a few students do to him?

"Let's go, show me the way."

"Hm!" Yang Wu responded coldly and turned around. He did not care at all about the others in the class. In his eyes, those with a life force of below 0.9 were of similar status to dogs and cats. Two hundred years ago in the sovereign state era, students with good grades looked down upon those without, let alone now.

Back then good grades were only a superficial status. Now, good grades meant a strong life force, an elitist status.

Not long after, Jiang Li arrived at another building with Yang Wu. It was also a training room; however it was of a much higher grade. It had all types of equipment, and even had an A.I computer.

This was an A.I computer training room built by the school on purpose. It could conjure many types of environments for training. It costs 100 star coins per hour of training, equivalent to a month's salary of Jiang Li's parents. Only wealthy families could afford to train in it.

Yang Wu swiped his I.D, and the giant glass doors slid open. In the middle of the room there was an arena. On it, a student in white clothes was battling with many soldiers.

The soldiers were all computer projections, however they look completely real. Under the A.I their movements were lithe and fluid. One could even see facial expressions on them. They simulated elite soldiers that were adept in close combat. Though they were fake, if one was to stand face to face with them, killing intent could be felt.

The high grade A.I computer utilized many lasers to construct the artificial realm. The soldiers were all energy vessels that could bleed like real people if injured.

The initial artificial training constituted of chopping up glowing fruit that fell from the sky, honing one's sword accuracy.

Now, artificial training meant lively vessels that had attacking power.

Ping...

The student in white suddenly leaped up, avoiding the attack of two soldiers. One punch knocked a soldier's head clean off, with fake blood splattering, that disappeared after a while. Afterwards the student continued to evade attacks, punching here and there.

The student's fists were like a hurricane, each containing a force of hundreds of kilograms. His speed was like the wind, his vigor like a tiger. More than ten soldiers were immediately torn apart.

Diiii...

The artificial environment disappeared.

Sou!

The student in white jumped off the arena, and a few nearby students hurriedly served up towels for him to wipe his sweat.

"Brother Bing, Jiang Li is here."

"Yang Wu, indeed a good friend of mine." The student in white was Zheng WenBing. Tall, and handsome, one could tell he was a fine man at first glance. He also possessed a natural imposing aura, and deducing from his battle with the artificial soldiers, his power and technique are at its peak.

The nearby students all had a life force of 0.8. These people were of normal household backgrounds, and thus were willing to be lackeys for Zheng Wenbing as they'd gain benefits.

But there was also another student nearby, also tall and handsome. However he acted distant, as if too prideful to interact with people. It was in fact Class Captain Zhang Yue.

Three outstanding characters of the school Zheng Wenbing, Yang Wu and Zhang Yue gathered together, staring down Jiang Li.

Of course, Zheng Wenbing was the centre of them all.

His family was the most powerful, and his own physical capabilities were crème de la crème. In last semester's exams, his life force had already reached 0.98, a breadth away from 1.

Once you have a life force of 1, your status would change immeasurably. Not only could you do pretty much anything at school, you also possessed great status even in society.

The army, police and government bodies craved such students.

"It was easy, not worthy of praise," Yang Wu nodded his head, and looked towards Jiang Li.

"Brother Bing is here, aren't you going to send your greetings?"

"Everyone is a fellow student," Jiang Li couldn't help but laugh. "It's not like you're a gang or anything, why would you need to be greeted? When did such rules apply in school?"

"Such reckless words," A student sneered. "Brother Bing, want to bash him up first?"

Other students huddled in and glanced at Jiang Li as if he was prey. It seems it wasn't the first time they had done something like this.

"You're very brave." Zheng Wenbing waved his hands, beckoning the others to stay put for now.

"Your brother Jiang Tao is strong, and looks down on me. But what are you relying on? Are you perhaps riding on your brother's power and influence?"

"What do you want from me?" Jiang Li scanned the sides. He had been surrounded.

If it were his former self, he'd feel great pressure, but now he craved for battle. "Don't tell me it's about stopping Jiang Tap interacting with Yelanie Lu? I can't control him, so finding me is useless."

"Calling you here today is for you to help me do something," Zheng Wenbing chucked aside the towel, "I have a packet of stuff here. When your family eats, put it inside Jiang Tao's bowl. Afterwards I'll give you 10,000 star coins! You have never seen so much star coins in your life, have you?"

"What, you want me to defile my brother?" Jiang Li had a weird expression on his face. Two hundred years ago in the 21st century, there had been cases of students that were jealous of another student's accomplishments, and resorted to food poisoning. Zheng Wenbing was also attempting the same ploy here.

To think Zheng Wenbing would try to kill Jiang Tao just because he beat him in a fight.

Chapter 23 - Lara Luo

"Don't worry, it's only a type of chronic type of nerve-poison. It has no smell and no taste so it's guaranteed that it won't be found. On top of that, it won't be lethal to your brother. It will only slowly reduce his physical capabilities." Zheng Wenbing had an indifferent face, "I know, your life in your family isn't perfect. All the resources in the family is given to Jiang Tao and therefore you could never succeed. Now, I will give you a chance to succeed, how about it?"

"If you don't agree, it doesn't matter." Zhang Yue said, "I heard you have a little sister and she is still in secondary college?"

"You're thinking of doing something to my sister!"

Jiang Li's face changed as an overwhelming anger burned inside him but he endured. Long periods of training had allowed his spirit to not be impulsive. He calmly thought of his next step, "Zheng Wenbing, this is a modern legal society. Wealthy people can't do whatever they want. Your actions will only lead to your demise."

"Modern legal society?" Zheng Wenbing acted as if heard the biggest joke in the world, "If it was still in the country era 200 hundred years ago, I would believe it is a legal society. But now, some people can live a few hundred years while other people can only live a hundred years. The essence of life isn't even equal anymore. Legality? What a joke."

Yang Wu waved his hand and smirked, "Jiang Li, you're too naïve. The

more technology advances the more advantage wealthy people have. Later on, wealthy people will be able to live long but poor people can only wait for their death. Why would anyone care about legality? We rich people are naturally nobler than people like you."

"It's pointless to say this. Don't forget, compared to the people in the elite district, we're all poor people. You are not yet the elite." Jiang Li took a step forward, "Zheng Wenbing, there's no way I will help you in dealing to my brother even if you give me 100,000, 1,000,000 star coins. And I warn you, if you try anything with my sister, I won't let you go."

"Hahahaha....." Zheng Wenbing had his hands behind his back, "If these words came from Jiang Tao, they would weigh something but coming from you, it's just a big joke. Actually, I don't need to make things so complicated, all I need is one sentence and I can make your parents lose their jobs. The company your parents are at is a branch company of the Xue Corporation and one of my good mates coincidentally is a high level manager in the Xue Corporation.

This was another significant threat.

It would be a significant blow to Jiang Li's family if both of his parents lost their jobs. After all, all the living expenses in the family such as study, food, clothes and other expenditures were all substantiated by his parent's income.

"My parents work too assiduously, it's good for them to take a break." Jiang Li wasn't threatened, "My brother and I will earn money for the family."

"Looks like, you want to lead yourself into your demise."

Zheng Wenbing sighed, "Then I won't be able to help you."

"Don't you dare!" Jiang Li's eyes burned with fury, "If I call the police, you won't do yourself any good."

"Call the police? I was only joking with you just then, just testing the relationship between you and your brother. Looks like you're not jealous of your brother at all?" Zheng Wenbing said slowly and suddenly his tone changed. He smiled a cunning smile, "Hehe, you have a deep relationship with your brother."

"Joking with me?" Jiang Li paused. He really couldn't discern what Zheng Wenbing wanted to do.

Normally, this would be against the law and if Zheng Wenbing really did it, he would destroy his own future. This could possibly be a threat and Zheng Wenbing's intentions were clear. Zheng Wenbing had many ways to play with Jiang Li and his brother. Maybe without noticing, Jiang Li and Jiang Tao would be poisoned. The poison could be those undetectable nerve poison. Zheng Wenbing was also trying to create conflict between Jiang Li and his brother.

"Bing bro, don't waste time talking to him." Zhang Yue was impatient, "Let's give this kid a lesson first. Then he'll know what's good and listen to us."

"Zhang Yue, you wish to take revenge on me from last time?" Jiang Li

asked calmly.

"So what if I am?" Zhang Yue's face appeared fierce, "Last time I didn't think you would improve that fast so I underestimated you. You won't have the same luck today. We should have combat training. That won't count as brawling."

"Bro, you should fight him, this kid doesn't like the hard way nor the easy way." Yang Wu folded his arms as if looking on at a spectacle, "I'll hold the line for you, you should go play with him first. I don't believe a poor kid can do anything."

"Zhang Yue, best not to fight in the school. We're all civilized people, what's the point of beating him? There are many ways to play with him and violence is the lowest type." Zheng Wenbing shook his head, "Jiang Li, think carefully, if you have a way for your little brother to control himself a little, I can agree not to do anything to you. However, if your brother is still that cocky, then I really wouldn't mind using some other ways to deal with him. If you hit someone, you don't hit their face. That day, he smacked my face really hard and now, you're not showing due respect to me. Tell me, what should I do?"

As he talked, Zheng Wenbing's tone was flat. He felt his face as if reminiscing the moment he was humiliated. His eyes were bleak like a deadly snake.

"Turns out that little brother smacked him in the face!" Jiang Li was stunned. This was something serious, no wonder Zheng Wenbing was so hateful.

These wealthy kids were really popular in the school. They would do anything after being hit in the face in front of everyone. Yet he could still stay calm now which means he wasn't someone to be messed with easily. He would be more troublesome later on.

"Bing bro, I'll avenge you." Zhang Yu suddenly attacked.

Peng!

Zhang Yue extended his fingers and used a subjugation hand technique. It was the [Twisting Arm Locking Shoulder] move of the [Capture and Brawl Art] and he already grabbed onto Jiang Li's shoulder.

Zhang Yue's was swift like the wind, his hands were long like a monkey. As they penetrated through the air, a sharp howling sound of the wind was created. Using it with a life force of 0.9, only the military instructors in the army could stop it.

Zhang Yue had improved a lot compared to when they fought in the gymnasium.

It seemed like that after Jiang Li injured his arm, he trained diligently and used some advanced supplements to boost his physical capabilities.

Pang!

Jiang Li's shoulder shifted up and the bones appeared as though they were live dragon snakes. He dodged slightly and Zhang Yue missed.

"Hmm?"

"Hmm?"

.....

A series of surprised voices sounded. Not only Zhang Yue was shocked but even Zheng Wenbing and his cronies found it inconceivable.

Zhang Yue was strong of the strong. When he grabbed, even excelling students with a life force of 0.8 couldn't stop it and could only submit themselves to subjugation.

"Damm it!"

Zhang Yue missed his move and was embarrassed. Killing intent emitted from his body and he was about to use his killing blow to attack with his full strength.

"What are you guys doing?" At this moment, a sound came from the door. It was unknown when the gym doors were opened and a girl stood in front of the entrance.

"Lara Luo?"

"Lara Luo....."

It was one of the four goddesses of the school, Lara Luo.

"What are you guys doing? Bullying students?" Lara Luo walked in. She scanned the scene and knew immediately what had occurred. She walked to Jiang Li, "Are you okay?"

"I'm fine." Jiang Li smiled.

"Zhang Yue, you are the class captain of Jiang Li's class. Why are you helping Zheng Wenbing bully students from your class?" Lara Luo interrogated.

"Um....." Zhang Yue spread out his hands in an unconcerned manner, "I'm only giving him a few pointers on his fighting techniques. You call this bullying?"

"Yea Lara Luo, Zhang Yue was only giving him a few pointers. Look, Jiang Li does not have a single injury. This isn't bullying." Zheng Wenbing smiled with ease.

Lara Luo looked at Jiang Li. Indeed there wasn't a single bit of injury on him and there weren't any signs of being beaten. She frowned. She was very intelligent and already guessed what had happened.

"Schoolmate Jiang Li, your brawling techniques are very bad, you still need plenty of practice. As your class captain, I will come for you frequently. I must get your grades up so you don't drag the class behind." Zhang Yue said allegorically.

"Jiang Li, go back first." Lara Luo protected, "When there's the opportunity I can help you with your cultivation and battle techniques. You don't need them."

Upon hearing this, Zhang Yue, Zheng Wenbing and the others had a spasm on their face. As one of the four goddesses of the school, Lara Luo had countless guys who wanted to be close with her. Never before had it been seen of her taking the initiative to be close with a guy especially a guy who was a very normal.

"That won't be necessary." Jiang Li stepped up lightly, "Class captain Zhang Yue wishes to give me pointers on my fighting techniques. This is good will, how can I reject him?"

"Don't be impulsive." Lara Luo hurried to stop him, "Jiang Li, you're no match for Zhang Yue. Don't let your emotions dictate what you do."

"Hahaha....." Zhang Yue laughed, "Since schoolmate Jiang Li insists so strongly, I will help you out. Lara Luo, you saw it this time. Schoolmate Jiang Li personally asked for my help."

"Don't worry." Jiang Li shrugged his shoulders and looked at Lara Luo. There was confidence and power in his eyes.

"Okay, I'll look on from here." Although Lara Luo was concerned, she was confident to hold the line for him and control the situation in the nick of time so she nodded.

“Class captain Zhang Yue, be careful.”

Jiang Li raised his hands and held them into a fist raising it above his head. The hand sign formed a circle. There were full of openings in this stance and was completely useless in combat. But the instance he formed the stance, his whole temperament changed as if he was a sun in the sky illuminating the earth. This was a starting hand position in the [Spirit Emperor Seal]. Accompanied with contemplation, Jiang Li's spirit was suddenly more focused.

“What is this? There are this many openings?” Zhang Yue had a smirk on his face and suddenly took a step forward. The ground shook and he used consecutive elbow strikes. It was the [Consecutive Fist Thrust of the [Military Exploding Fist Thrust].

Bang, bang bang, the fist struck across the air accompanied with footstep techniques. It was a killing move as soon as Zhang Yue attacked.

Fast! Fast! Fast!

There were elbow strikes from the upper body and swoops, stomps, kicks, uppercuts from the lower body. Even if they connected slightly, it would result in broken bones and torn tendons. He approached Jiang Li like a humanoid beast in the matter of a moment.

D rank martial art, [Capture and Brawl Art]!

This was a prevalent ferocious move in the military. It used both the arms and legs and required the person to use everything to attack the

enemy. Its aim was to kill the enemy or beat them to they were debilitated.

Jiang Li kept his smile on his face as he watched Zhang Yue approach.

Pang!

When Zhang Yue approached, Jiang Li suddenly blinked as if he disappeared, [Twisting Bone Attack]!

He went around to Zhang Yue's side and reached out with a grab, [Dragon Claw Subjugation], [Fire Dragon Scorching the Plains]! Many fiery claw shaped images blinked and reached for every single vital points of Zhang Yue's body.

"Damm it!" When Zhang Yue saw a fury of claws reach to enclose upon him from his side, he immediately bit his teeth and twisted his body too.

"Lay down!"

Jiang Li sneered as his body went forward. A fist exploded out like a shark breaking the surface of water to bite people.

The two people clashed together.

Zhang Yue howled in pain as he flew back.

As soon as he touched Jiang Li's body, his force was miraculously eradicated by Jiang Li's twisting arm as the arm continued to knock him flying.

Crack crack.... Zhang Yue fell to the floor. The bones in his body seemed like they were cracking. His eyes turned white as he fainted.

An influential person of the school with a life force of 0.9 was sent flying and unconscious with just one move...

Not long before, Jiang Li was still on par with Zhang Yue. But after the battle with Illusory Fox which resulted in the activation of the [Spiritual Emperor Seal] in the Great Dream Heart Sutra, Jiang Li trained in this seal and his physical capabilities skyrocketed. Zhang Yue was completely outmatched.

Chapter 24 - I Can Also Whip You

"What?"

Not just Zheng Wenbing and his cronies but also Lara Luo was dazed by this scene.

"Class Captain Yue, looks like your battle techniques aren't so good." Jiang Li looked natural as if defeating Zhang Yue wasn't such a great accomplishment. After fighting with Illusory Fox, these types of school battles were child's play, "Zheng Wenbing, I need to ask you for help with me battle techniques, how about it? You called me today to the gym for a spar anyways."

"[Boneless Jujitsu]. Zheng Wenbing's eyes were cold and even his facial muscles were under spasm. A gust of coldness surged from his the bottom of his heart. He really didn't think that Jiang Tao was strong but his useless brother was stronger.

He knocked Zhang Yue out with just one blow. Even he couldn't do that. In other words, Jiang Li's power was stronger than his.

"Jiang Li, you...."

Lara Luo frowned, "How did you become so strong in such a short time?"

"I was suddenly enlightened a few months before and my spiritual training has entered the Deep Sleep stage." Of course Jiang Li couldn't talk about Fetal Respiration.

"Oh?" You had a breakthrough in your spiritual training?" Lara Luo's eyes blinked.

If normal civilians who didn't have enough resources wanted to succeed, their only hope was a breakthrough in their spiritual training.

"Not bad." Zheng Wenbing's face spasmed again, "Looks like our school will have another strong person. I will remember what happened today, we'll settle things later on. Let's go!"

"Little punk, just you wait." Yang Wu's tone sounded cruel and wanted to try and fight with Jiang Li but he didn't rebuke Zheng Wenbing's words.

"You're just going to go like this?" Jiang Li's figure dashed to the exit of the gymnasium and blocked it preventing them from leaving.

"What do you want?" Zheng Wenbing's face was cold.

"Nothing, I just want to tell you something." Jiang Li folded his arms looking at ease.

"What?" Zheng Wenbing's pupils dilated to the size of a needle.

Shuah!

Jiang Li suddenly moved and rushed towards him. This rush looked like a hungry tiger seeking a sheep. It was fast like lighting.

It was a move from the [Spiritual Emperor Seal]!

Zheng Wenbing hurried to dodge, as he shifted, there was a look of cruelty in his eyes, "Kill!"

His five fingers shaped like a hook suddenly reached out for the throat. If it connected, there was no doubt that the throat would be snapped!

Jiang Li's body didn't move. His hands were raised high and swooped down heavily. He suddenly yelled loudly, "Niu!"

He incorporated his hypnosis techniques into this yell.

Zheng Wenbing's body uncontrollably stopped for a moment as he shook and at this moment, Jiang Li sliced down heavily with his hands blocking Zheng Wenbing's claws. His arm curled and subsequently, there was a slap.

Pia!

A clear sound of a smack echoed inside the gymnasium.

Zheng Wenbing kept on stepping as a red mark appeared on his face. He was smacked in the face by Jiang Li.

In less the three seconds, Zheng Wenbing was slapped in the face again.

"I want to tell you! Zheng Wenbing, if my brother can slap you, I can slap you too." Jiang Li folded his arms. The Zheng Wenbing in his eyes had a bloodshot face as if he was about to pounce on him like an injured beast.

My brother can slap you, so can I!

Jiang Li had experienced life and death brawls. Why would he be afraid of people like Zheng Wenbing? Compared to Illusory Fox, he was little kid that had just learnt to walk.

"You dare to hit me!" Zheng Wenbing spat out these few words.

"You're not content are you?" Jiang Li continued: "I slapped you in the face just then, what can you do? Get the police to apprehend me? Call a group of people to beat me up? Or tell the school to expel me? Let me tell you, you can't do any of these three things so all you can do now is endure."

This was a spar in the school gym, accidents were normal. If he reported to the police, he would only make a joke of himself. It was useless to call people to beat Jiang Li up. Even if he told the school, the school would only think it was normal sparring.

In other words, no matter what Zheng Wenbing did, it would only be embarrassing for himself.

"Just you wait, Jiang Li."

Zheng Wenbing held his face as he walked out, his whole body quivering with anger that he almost couldn't hold. However, he couldn't do anything about Jiang Li for now at least. Therefore, he could only eat this slap in the face up.

There was just Jiang Li and Lara Luo left in the gym.

"Didn't think that you could improve so fast." Lara Luo looked as though it was her first time knowing Jiang Li.

"It's still far from what's needed for Astral University." Jiang Li waved his hands, "I'll go see my sister first, I'm afraid Zheng Wenbing is going to take revenge on her."

"Is Zheng Wenbing revenging for what happened between your brother and Yelani Lu?" Lara Luo's eyes were dangerously cold.

"Lara, you shouldn't interfere with this matter, what you need to do now is train harder for Astral University. Your time is tighter than mine, and there are some things that I can take care of myself." Jiang Li didn't want to be too intimate with Lara Luo at this moment. There was not only one person in the school who liked Lara Luo, Zhang Yue was just an insignificant figure.

A few geniuses with a life force of 1 were also interested in Lara.

He only had the right to pursue what he liked when he was strong enough.

"Zheng Wenbing, Zhang Yue, Yang Wu are very narrow hearted. You need to be careful." Lara Luo warned him.

"Not to worry, in this end of semester test, as long as my life force can reach 1, I will definitely be valued by the school. Then, they wouldn't dare to do anything to me." Jiang Li was very confident, "Oh right, you came here for training right? Too bad I can't afford to train here, it's too expensive."

"It's on me." Lara Luo said hurriedly.

"That won't be necessary." Jiang Li smiled, "You go do what you need, I'll train back at home myself."

"Okay." Lara Luo took out her student chip and scanned in on the computer in front for identity verification. The computer made a sound, "Large scale virtual reality activated, please select the mode, gangster killing mode, 100 star coins an hour, soldier killing mode, 300 star coins an hour, zombie killing mode, 500 star coins an hour."

"Is there great martial artist system?" Lara Luo asked.

"Sorry, great martial artist system is not open. The energy it requires is too great. Currently, the highest is zombie mode." The computer's voice remained calm without any emotion.

"Okay then, activated zombie mode for 3 hours." Lara Luo said.

"Mode selected, please submit 1500 star coins and another 500 star coins to buy a 3 hour battery."

2000 star coins was gone like this.

This was 2 years worth of Jiang Li's parent's salary. Three hours, it was a game that only the wealthy could play.

But for Lara Luo, this was nothing.

She stood in the centre of the system and suddenly, the scene changed. Zombies appeared from all directions! These zombies had bones of iron and skin of copper, and they had great strength. They came and went like the wind, attacking towards Lara Luo.

This created both a visual and an auditory sense of spookiness.

These zombies were energy bodies and not holographic. This was also a product of the great modern technology.

Those virtual backgrounds were made half real half fake. The modeled humans also had strong offensive power but they were all sustained by

energy and therefore, had a high cost.

Now, Lara Luo was in the virtual scene killing those zombies causing great energy depletion. That was why it was so expensive.

If people trained like this every day, their improvements would be substantial. It was simulating a real life and death situation. Jiang Li also wanted to train like this, unfortunately, he didn't have that much money.

He looked at Lara who was slaying zombies incessantly. She suddenly struck as a zombie was penetrated by her hand blade. That zombie fell to the ground and continued crawling as if it was really alive.

He also wanted to play inside but shook his head and laughed bitterly as he left.

"Damn it..."

In the nursery, Zhang Yue was completely conscious. He shook his head and still felt slightly dizzy.

Good thing Jiang Li didn't deliver serious blows and only used the vibrational power of [Dragon Claw Subjugation] to throw him into unconsciousness. There weren't any damages to the inside of his body.

Zheng Wenbing and Yang Wu stood on the sides. When they saw Zhang Yue regain his senses, their faces were bleaker.

Even since Zheng Wenbing was slapped in the face, he fell silent and

didn't talk.

"Bing bro, are you still okay?" Yang Wu didn't dare to ask too much. That slap not only slapped Zheng Wenbing's face but also his heart.

"I want to kill the Jiang Li and Jiang Tao brothers." Zheng Wenbing said coldly.

"Bing brother, don't be impulsive." Yang Wu said worriedly, "We'll ruin ourselves if we kill them."

"Are we just going to let this go then?" There was no way Zhang Yue could just take it. His facial expression was of enmity, "Ever since I grew up, I've never had this embarrassment especially in front of Lara today. I lost all my face."

"I won't be impulsive and I won't get people to deal with these two brothers. I will use appropriate methods to destroy his family and push them into oblivion." Zheng Wenbing didn't throw a tantrum, "First check their family's information. These two brothers' life forces are very strong, I will find their weak point."

"Bing brother, I know someone from the police department and can go look at any of their information. From since they were born to now, the police department have all of their information." Yang Wu said.

"Bing brother, you have an idea?" Zhang Yue seemed to know what Zheng Wenbing was thinking.

"I will find something to control them. In these years, as long as you're still in society, you will have friends and relatives. Doesn't his parents work at a branch company of the Xue Corporation?" Zheng Wenbing thought for a while and calmed down completely. He felt his face that was slapped, "As long as I control their parents, I can do whatever I want to these brothers. They're very good at fighting aren't they? Then, I'll send them to brawl in the black market and earn money for us."

"Haha....." Zhang Yue couldn't contain his laugh, "Yes, let's turn these two brats into our money making machine. They have to do what we want them to do. Only this will be a proper retribution. It's far from enough just to beat them up."

"Of course, what's the point in beating them?" Zheng Wenbing dialed a number: "Beating them is a brainless act. Hello, is this Tian brother? I'm Wenbing, can you help check something out. Is there a worker with surname Jiang in your company, yes, his name is Jiang Zhendong. He has two sons called Jiang Tao and Jiang Li....."

After the call, Zheng Wenbing rubbed his palms, "A bunch of poyo kids want to mess with me? They won't even know how they died. Two slaps in the face. I will make everyone in your family pay!"

This thing was just a small incident for Jiang Li which didn't really affect him.

He didn't spread news of him defeating Zhang Yue and Lara Luo wouldn't say it while Zhang Yue himself didn't say it. Zheng Wenbing and his cronies kept their mouths shut. This was embarrassing news for them. They were actually scared Jiang Li would spread the news.

But after that, Jiang Li became more wary. He was afraid that Zheng Wenbing would do harm to his family especially his younger sister Jiang Xuan. He followed secretly before school and after school.

Since the experience of apprehending Illusory Fox, his spirit was more trained. If someone wished to do him harm, he should be able to feel it through his sixth sense.

It seemed like Zheng Wenbing and them were plotting something.

"I need to go to the black market of Xu Hua City." Jiang Li thought, "Once I get my hands on the Super Protein, it can alleviate my problems of nutrition deficiency and completely cure the loss of life potential due to Fetal Respiration. No matter how dangerous the black market is, I will still go."

Jiang Li immediately moved out.

He had a little anticipation. If he really could buy this forbidden medicine, would he be able to contemplate the brain of the universe after the injection?"

He bought a train ticket to Xu Hua City online immediately and at the same time, he bought a 'cosmetic face'.

'Cosmetic face' was a high technology face mask. Its price was very cheap and didn't cost much. He didn't need very advanced masquerade. All he needed was for people to not see his face. When going to Xu Hua

City, it was best to not show your real face to people. It was really complicated there, full of violence and chaos. There was no law there.

An hour or so later, a middle aged man came down from the floating train and arrived at Xu Hua City.

This middle aged man was Jiang Li wearing the Cosmetic Face.

Xu Hua City and Xing Hua City had more than 1000 kilometres between them but it only took one hour by train. When Jiang Li left the floating train, he immediately felt a completely different world.

His first impression was that it was filthy and chaotic.

Chapter 25 - Super Protein

This was Jiang Li's first time stepping into a city other than Xing Hua City.

There was rubbish everywhere as soon as he stepped out of the station. The wind blew rapidly and people of all sorts were there. Most of them had hideous faces and bleak temperaments; one could tell that they weren't good people. Around him, the tall buildings looked obsolete.

This was Xu Hua City, the haven for adventures, the heaven for criminals, and the underground trade black market.

The main purpose Jiang Li came here was to purchase the forbidden medicine, Super Protein to increase his strength.

The price of that Super Protein Serum was just in his acceptable range of prices.

If he could increase his physical capabilities more and increase the speed of his hands cultivating [Spiritual Emperor Seal], then his contemplation speed would also increase. Perhaps, his hypnosis techniques would improve further as well.

At that time, it would be when he earned the big money.

The Jiang Li from before would definitely not dare to step foot into this

land of sin but now, he had courage due to his strength and could further improve his abilities here.

A man who didn't experience troubles and darkness would never grow and stay like a flower in a greenhouse forever.

"Little kid, stay still! Otherwise I'll turn you into roast pork!"

At the corner of the station, Jiang Li was searching the map when a person from behind him suddenly charged at him and held his weapon on Jiang Li's back. The weapon was cold, and it was a high voltage electric metal stick. The person had his hands on the button, and if he pressed it, a current strong enough to shock an elephant would flow through.

"What do you want?"

He didn't think that he would meet a criminal as soon as he got off the train. This place was definitely the land of sins. The crime rate was extremely high, people could be robbed, tricked, threatened at any time.....

The criminal behind him was a baldy with a tattooed arm that was thick with power.

The bald headed man laughed hysterically, "What do I want to do? Take out your card immediately and transfer! Transfer all your money."

There was barely anyone who carried cash in modern society and this made it inconvenient for criminals to commit robberies. They had to

control the person to do an online bank transfer.

Therefore, the bald headed man didn't deliver the killing blow immediately. He forced his target to transfer first. If it was in other cities, even if there was a successful transaction, the police could still chase the money back afterwards. However, there were no police in Xu Hua City and therefore, there was no way of chasing the money back.

There was no existence of law in this city. What existed was the subtle laws that the gangs here set themselves.

"So this is a robbery, although Xu Hua City is chaotic, but this is getting chaotic too fast. I got robbed as soon as I got off the train."

Jiang Li turned his body slightly. His speed was extremely fast. In fact, his spirit sensed the man a long time ago but he wanted to see what the man wanted to do. Since he was robbing Jiang Li, Jiang Li had nothing to say.

Shuah!

He maneuvered to the bald headed man's back as a hand blade sliced through heavily onto the man's major artery on his neck.

The bald headed man's body fell softly. The metal wand in his hand dropped to the ground making a danging sound. He was completely no match for Jiang Li.

Jiang Li's life force was near 1. This was military instructor level power.

His fist power reached 0.8 tonnes, and his body was light like a sparrow, agile like a monkey. After extensive training in contemplation, his sixth sense was much more acute than most people and could detect the enemy amidst danger.

After dropping the man with one move, Jiang Li's face moved. He felt the person's head and noticed his breathing, and life rhythm. He massaged twice and the man looked like he was about to wake.

He immediately used a gentle voice and said, "Sleep, sleep.... Do you feel very tired?"

"Yes!" Hearing Jiang Li's voice, the man replied numbly and dozily as if he was talking in his dreams.

"Hypnosis successful." Jiang Li was rejoicing in his heart and continued his hypnosis, "How much money do you have in your chip?"

"8000". The man replied drowsily.

"Then hurry up and transfer to me." Jiang Li's tone kept up with the man's life rhythm. It was very light and soothing as he described, "There's a really beautiful woman in front of you, and if you give the 8000 star coins, she will stay with you..."

"No!" The man shook his head vigorously as his body trembled, "What kind of bitch needs 8000 star coins, fuck! Go die! I will kill whoever wants my money!"

Subsequently, he was about to wake up.

"Hypnosis failed!" Jiang Li stared at the man coldly as he was about to wake up. If the person was hypnotized to do something strongly against his own will, then he would resist or even wake up.

Of course, his spiritual training was inadequate. If it was Illusory Fox, he would straight out cripple the person's will and turn the person into the walking dead.

His hypnosis technique was still inadequate so it seemed.

The man opened his eyes as Jiang Li grappled onto his neck heavily, contracting slowly. The man's face immediately went red as his legs kicked.

"Transfer all the money in your account to me, otherwise you die!" Jiang Li didn't bother with hypnosis and used violence instead to bend the man to his will. Then, he released his hands a little and the man immediately gasped for breath, "I'm a member of the Order of Three, how dare you rob me."

Jiang Li then tightened his grip on the man's neck.

The man had a face of horror and quickly nodded begging with sounds of whimpering.

Jiang Li released his hands again, "Hurry up and transfer. I'm only giving you one chance! Last chance!"

"I'll do it, I'll do it." The man took out his chip immediately and did as he was told by Jiang Li.

Ding Dong!

8000 star coins transferred.

"Now can you let me go?" The man was about to stand up.

Peng! Jiang Li used another hand blade to knock the man out cold. This time it was much heavier and would probably result in brain concussion. It would be no surprise if the man turned into a fool. Looking at the man spill white foam from his mouth and shake like he was crazy, Jiang Li turned to leave. He didn't care what happened to these trash of the human race. There was no telling how many people he robbed. Since the law didn't punish him, Jiang Li didn't mind him doing it for the heavens. Removing the violent and settling the good.

Running rapidly out of the train station, he didn't catch anyone's attention. It wasn't rare for robbery and murder to occur in this city. Who would care about these insignificant matters.

Walking on the streets, he felt it was funny that his hypnosis was less useful than violence.

"North Bridge Road, 83? It's here!"

Walking out of the station, Jiang Li didn't even call for a taxi and just used the map to search. The taxis in Xu Hua City were all controlled by gangs. Perhaps it would turn into a robbery or they would carry you to other places. Before, there had been many females who went on the taxis in Xu Hua City and ended up being abducted. What happened to them was horrible.

Traversing incessantly in the city, Jiang Li's stamina was great and his speed was rapid. An hour or so later, he arrived in front of a fifty storey or so building. This building was decorated very ostentatiously. Its surroundings were very clean and there was even a fountain. People were hired to manage this. Only a major power would be able to own such a place in Xu Hua City.

The gangsters, criminals, drop kicks didn't even dare to disturb them.

This was one of the places in the black market that sold and bought forbidden medicine.

On the building were four words "An Quan Da Sha."

This was one of the credible black markets of Xu Hua City according to online comments. People said it was a military giant's business. It leaked forbidden medicine from the elite district and earned money in Xu Hua City.

It was one of the major power factions in Xu Hua City. Gangsters who came looking for trouble were literally asking to die.

"Hello Sir, may I ask what you wish to purchase?"

As soon as Jiang Li walked to the door, a pretty female sales assistant walked up and greeted him with hospitality. It rendered a stark contrast between the cold and dark style of the city and gave people a sense of affability.

"I'm here to buy some Super Protein Gene Invigorator. I saw this online." Jiang Li didn't disguise his intentions.

"Oh, please follow me." The pretty girl led the way hurriedly. 100,000 star coins wasn't a small amount. It was also a moderately sized business.

Jiang Li also followed the girl upstairs immediately. There were many floors and he came to approximately the 20th floor. He appeared in a lobby approximately 4000-5000 square meters big. Inside the lobby was full of crystal shelves and closets with stacks of medication locked inside.

"This is a Ruby Brain?" Jiang Li browsed and his body shook with excitement. In the most obvious place, there was a fist sized fruit placed for show. It had a blood red colour and was shaped like the human brain.

He knew of this special type of fruit from online.

This was the fruit harvested from the sacred tree of another planet. According to legends, that sacred tree required pure human blood as a sacrifice for irrigation. It was an ancient totem of the aboriginals.

The fruit it bore was a brain shaped fruit with a blood red colour.

If people consumed this fruit, their brains would be hyperactive and their spiritual power would increase dramatically. It was greatly beneficial to cultivation.

Unfortunately, the pricing made Jiang Li stop.

"5,000,000' star coins

There was no way he could afford it.

Other than this, there were bottles of liquids further inside that were priced even higher. Jiang Li saw three which were priced over 10 million star coins.

"Mammoth DNA fluid!"

That was a medical fluid that could change the DNA. It was an essence of the advanced human technology. It was created using a mixture of mammoth and human DNA that underwent many scientific procedures. After injection, people's DNA would be strengthened and would receive a part of a mammoth's DNA. A year after injection, the body would be extremely strong and its strength would near that of a giant elephant.

However, this type of genetic fluid had risks. It only had 50% chance of success.

If the injection failed, sometimes it would be completely without effect

and 10 million star coins would be wasted. Other times it may instead cause conflict with the body's DNA and result in paralysis or even death.

Even so, there were still quite a lot of wealthy people who bought it. Many decades of hard work couldn't even compare with one injection. This was too enticing and on top of that, they could use it to develop their subordinates.

Although Jiang Li's life force was currently 0.9 and his strength was the top amongst his peers, if he met someone who inject the DNA fluid, it would only take one punch from the person to send him flying.

"The Super Protein injection serum that you wanted is here." The lady brought Jiang Li in front of a glass cupboard. Inside were tubes of a grassy green liquid.

"Sir, how many do you wish to purchase?" The lady looked at Jiang Li and was quite shocked on the inside. Super Protein was something good but its prerequisites for injection were too high. It required the 3rd stage of Deep Sleep to properly utilize it.

People whose spiritual training were at this stage were all strong.

"I'll buy one tube first."

"Okay, please wait for a moment." The lady took out the medicine and Jiang Li started the transaction.

The transaction went smoothly and ding dong, 100,000 star coins disappeared like that. Jiang Li could not bear the pain. The large sum he

had just gotten his hands on was close to nil. He became close to being broke again. But thinking about how the Super Protein serum was in his hands, and how after injection, the damage done by Fetal Respiration would be repaired, he felt that it was worth it in the end.

"I've got it!"

When that green tube of protein was in his hands, Jiang Li resisted the urge to inject it immediately and turned to leave.

"Hey brother, could you wait a moment."

At this moment, a middle aged man with an imposing manner walked towards to him. Conspicuously, this was a high level manager of the corporation. He walked forward and looked at Jiang Li.

"Argh....." Jiang Li turned his head and looked into the man's eyes. His vision became a bit blurry as he heard his voice.

He was being hypnotized!

Chapter 26 - Injection

This was the second time Jiang Li was being hypnotized.

The first time was Illusory Fox and that nearly killed him.

If it wasn't for the opaque stone, it would have definitely ended in a tragedy that time. Luckily, he gained fortune from calamity and was able to use Illusory Fox's spirit energy to unlock the secrets of the opaque stone and learn the [Spiritual Emperor Seal].

This time, he was being hypnotized again.

He wasn't the ignorant kid on that day. When he was being hypnotized his instinctive will alerted him. His thoughts ran rapidly while his brain cells strengthened and the blood in his body boiled. As his head buzzed, his eyes shot out spirit aura.

"Hypnotise me?"

Jiang Li woke up with his eyes widely awake.

"His spiritual prowess is so strong."

The middle aged manager didn't successfully hypnotise Jiang Li and his eyes shot out an intrigued look, "Looks like brother you have learnt

hypnosis as well? Very few people could stop my hypnosis."

This person was definitely an Elementary Hypnotist and his life force could very possibly be 0.9.

"So he was testing me." Although Jiang Li was unhappy, he was in their territory. There would definitely be no good of throwing a tantrum.

He knew that if he couldn't stop the person's hypnosis, he would spill all his secrets.

"What intentions do you harbor for testing me?" Jiang Li's tone was very cold.

"Don't misunderstand me." The middle aged manager laughed, "Brother, your spiritual prowess is very strong, I was wondering if you have the intention of earning money. We, the Safety Corporation are hiring hypnotists."

"Hiring hypnotists?"

Jiang Li came to the black market first to buy the Super Protein to increase his strength, and second to see if he had any chance of earning money.

"How much money a month? How do I work?" He asked for the salary immediately.

"That will depend on how strong you really are." The middle aged

manager replied, "My surname is Gao, first name is Ren. Sir how may I refer to you?"

"Jiang Fire." Of course Jiang Li couldn't use his real name.

But Li meant fire.

So he used this for his name.

"If you don't mind sir, could you please demonstrate your abilities?" Gao Ren clicked his fingers and Jiang Li's attention was immediately captured by the click. Gao Ren was using hypnosis again.

Any movement, sentence, sound could be used as hypnosis. If Jiang Li wasn't an expert at hypnosis himself, he would have been hypnotized again.

"I don't have much ability, so there's no need to demonstrate." Jiang Li waved his hands as a sign of refusal.

However, when he waved his hand, his hand waved softly like flower petals falling from the sky creating after images. This instantly captured Gao Ren's eyes.

Dong!

That pretty waiter fell down on the floor softly and went to sleep immediately.

Meanwhile, Gao Ren also felt his eyes become fuzzy. His face suddenly changed as he yelled at the top of his lungs, "STOP!"

With this yell, some crystal shelves were sent shaking.

"Jiang Li stop!"

Jiang Li was also very cunning, when he said he wasn't demonstrating his hypnosis techniques, he was actually lying. As he spoke, he focused his spirit with his hand seals creating a very strong influence on Gao Ren.

A hypnotist had to use every opportunity to catch the target off guard.

Otherwise, if you tell the person you are going to hypnotise them, then they would reject it from the bottom of their heart and therefore make it very difficult for hypnosis to succeed.

Jiang Li was studying a hypnosis technique online. He read ten lines with one glance and saw countless educational videos. The most classic of them all was one in which a hypnotist tried to hypnotise someone that was ready and couldn't succeed no matter what.

At last, that hypnotist said he was tired and drank a cup of water.

The person believed it to be true and watched the hypnotist pour the water.

In the end, the action of pouring water caused the person to be hypnotized when he looked at the thin stream of water clashing against the cup.

The first thing to do was to deceive the target into making them relaxed. It was also the most important technique of a hypnotist.

"You're good!"

Gao Ren looked at the female waitress on the floor. She was still sleeping even after his roar. In fact, his roar incorporated the sound of the [Lion Roar] and could awake people's consciousnesses.

"You praise me too much." Jiang Li showed a smile on his face, "I wonder if my hypnosis techniques are decent?"

"Your state is already at the level of an Elementary Hypnotist." Gao Ren appeared as if he discovered a new continent, "Brother, I think you can sign a contract with our Safety Corporation and become a contract hypnotist."

"I will contact you if I'm interested." Jiang Li didn't want to waste too much time with Gao Ren right now as he wanted to rush back and inject the Super Protein to increase his strength.

"Okay then, brother, this is my card. Come straight to me if you need anything in the future." Gao Ren passed up a piece of card.

Jiang Li accepted it and turned to leave.

After he left, Gao Ren took out a silver needle and poked it deep into the brain of the waitress. After stimulation with acupuncture, the waitress finally woke up.

"Manager Gao, this person's hypnosis is so strong." The waitress was still scared after regaining consciousness.

"It is strong indeed, even I almost fell to his hypnosis. Our corporation needs people like him. Hopefully he will contact me in the future." Gao Ren said.

"Then do we need to investigate this person?" The waitress asked.

"That won't be necessary. Our rule is that we can't ask no matter who the customer is." Gao Ren shook his head, "If we break this rule, we would lose too many major customers. It won't end well if the higher authority investigates on this matter."

"Yes!" The waitress was startled.

"I think this person will come find me..." Gao Ren said, "He seems to be in desperate need of money."

After leaving the Safety building, Jiang Li felt as if many eyes were staring at him. It was like a sheep surrounded by wolves. He knew that some gangsters waited outside the entrance of Safety Building to see who came out so that they may rob them.

There were blogs like this online.

Somebody bought forbidden medicine in the black market and was immediately robbed as soon as he left the building.

However, Jiang Li was well prepared. His body swooshed as he rushed into a small alley. There were men surrounding him but he dropped them without breaking a sweat. He kept running to shake off the people following him. It finally died down when he went inside a desolate building.

He researched his escape route online already.

There were many old buildings without anyone inside in Xu Hua City. There were left behind from hundreds of years ago making it perfect for hiding.

He was going to inject it here.

Because Super Protein was a forbidden drug, taking it back would be breaking the law. He would be sent behind bars if it was discovered. Of course, those illicit drug dealers had their own ways to bring it to other cities but Jiang Li didn't have it so he wouldn't even be able to board the train.

Train leaving from Xu Hua City to Xing Hua City was strictly searched.

One train takes you to a completely different world.

Therefore, his only way was to inject in Xu Hua City.

“Better check if this is real. I would lose so much if this was fake. I saw online that Safety Corporation was very big. It is unnecessary for them to use fake drugs to deceive people, plus, their street reputation is very good.” However, Jiang Li was still concerned and took the jade green serum out for examination. He squeezed out a bit carefully and used his computer to take a photo. The online microscope would then give an initial investigation.

With the current technology, only a small computer chip was needed to replace many things. The images taken by the computers could be uploaded online for scientific analysis. There were those websites that could do scientific analysis for a small price. Though, they couldn't be used for scientific research.

In a short while, the webpage displayed the analysis results. The authenticity investigation deemed the Super Protein to be real.

“Hopefully I can absorb it perfectly.” Staying pensive for a while, Jiang Li fully understood the uses of Super Protein. When he was completely calm, he started the injection.

Hua La!

He poked the needle down!

Watching the tube of liquid being slowly pushed into his body, Jiang Li almost immediately felt like he jumped into a volcano. His heart beat

increased by ten folds! Dong Dong Dong, it was like a beating drum as his blood vessels inflated. His body was almost twice as thick. Reality was blurry to him as he felt that there was heat ready to explode out of his body.

He simply wanted to rip apart anything in front of him.

“Calm, stay calm....” Instantly, he knew how potent this serum was. No wonder normal people couldn’t use it. He tried his best to stay calm, keep his inner peace and slow down the flow of blood. However, it was useless. His body moved without control.

The power of the Super Protein was too frantic!

He couldn’t calm down no matter what, and it was tens of times stronger than any adrenalin!

Jiang Li felt like his heart was going to explode after the blood pressure expansion caused by the injection. His veins also felt like they were going to explode. Suddenly, something in his head did explode and he felt his head buzz.

He entered into Deep Sleep immediately.

Without a doubt, every cell seemed to rejoice after a full meal as if they were alive.

The injection of a tube of Super Protein gave Jiang Li a life changing transformation.

First, his figure gradually became perfect. His body felt like an air bag. With each inflation and deflation, large amounts of air were spewed out. He seemed like a hydraulic pump of a super race car.

People would think he was like superman.

According to legends, martial arts grandmasters from the country era 200 years ago could blow back the waves in the ocean when they practiced breathing. Jiang Li always thought it was just a myth but seeing his current status now, he actually felt that it was possible.

Just like this, the potent power of the Super Protein serum completely dissolved within his cells and at the same time, improved and upgraded his life potential.

His cells then squirmed changing Jiang Li's physical capabilities.

The cells in his body ate away at the Super Protein voraciously. With each rejoicing, the cells grew stronger, especially the brain cells. It operated frantically giving the appearance of a golden bead manifesting between his eyebrows.

A few hours later, he woke up and exhaled. He felt fully energized and the damage done to him previously by Fetal Respiration was completely repaired.

This was instinct because when Jiang Li looked inside his body with his spirit, he discovered that all his organs were strong on both the outside

and inside unlike before.

Before, he knew he was strong but that outwardly strong but inwardly weak feeling could not be dispelled from the depth of his spirit. This was an indication of the damage his life potential received meaning that he didn't have long to live.

Now, he finally started to recover.

However, Jiang Li didn't dare to try Fetal Respiration now. This wasn't something that the current him could use.

Chapter 27 - Increase in Physical Capabilities

"Let's see how strong my physical capabilities are right now."

Jiang Li tightened his hands into a fist making crackling sounds.

His bones and muscles vibrated slightly and a gust of air like Force Qi was created.

Punching out a fist, a series of air explosions sounded from the fist to the arm then to the whole body. The power was fierce yet soft at the same time. It seemed like a light punch but its force was strong as a thunderstorm.

"God...my strength..."

Jiang Li stared at his hands in shock. He felt that as he breathed, he created strong air currents in his lungs. His arm was smooth and white without any flaws. With slight tension, his whole arm immediately grew thick bulging veins that formed a metal net. It gave people a feeling of an iron giant.

He had a feeling that cement and steel walls would be as soft as tofu and he could penetrate it with a single poke.

He tried contemplating and immediately in the depth of his brain, a clear scene of the brain of the universe appeared. Now, he could almost

see every star as it blinked and the various worlds and continents inside. The contemplation image went from macroscopic view to microscopic view.

When he was in his dreams, the opaque stone displayed the image of the brain of the universe. It was very profound with trillions of stars and planets. As each one of them blinked, there were many different changes. The brain of the universe blinked and operated non stop. If Jiang Li increased the speed, he would feel dizzy and have a bloody nose which signified damage to the brain cells.

But now, as he contemplated the pathways of those blinking stars, he would only feel a little dizzy and not bleed his nose when he increased the contemplation speed. This was the effect of increasing the strength of the brain cells.

In fact, he felt as if his thoughts were sparkling as he contemplated the blinking of the stars.

Shoooh!

He moved a thought and his body sped out and landed softly on the balcony. Below were tens of meters squared of abandoned worksites which dazzled people with acrophobia.

But he didn't care at all as he didn't have acrophobia.

His body felt like it could be controlled precisely with every thought so he could do whatever he wanted.

Peng Peng Peng Peng.....

He started practicing [Military Exploding Fist Thrust] in the abandoned building. This was the simplest yet most effective way of testing his physical capabilities. As his feet moved, his fist made explosive sounds in the air.

The explosion sounds were controlled by his heart. They would sound loud or low if he wanted them to be. This was a proficient control of power, lifting the heavy like it was light.

Before, he had to use his full power to make a huge exploding sound. Now, with a light punch, there were series of explosions.

1 explosion.....17.....25.....36 explosions.....

He struck consecutively and only when he hit the 36th explosion, he felt a little puffed. Thus, he stopped.

Before injecting the Super Protein, he could hit out 18 explosions max. But now, he could hit 36 explosions. This was simply a miracle. It looked like that one tube of Super Protein was extremely potent and didn't waste his 100,000 star coins.

"That was very strong! I wonder how powerful my punches are now. 1 tonne?" Jiang Li needed to find an opportunity to test it out. His confidence was greatly boosted and felt like he could fight with anyone.

He knew that his life force definitely reached 1!

Crack!

He picked up a random cobblestone and used [Dragon Claw Subjugation] to squeeze it slightly. The cobblestone was shattered and with a few pinches it cracked into shards.

Form seal!

He started weaving [Spiritual Emperor Seal]. With this, his hand speed was almost twice as fast. In a short moment, his fingers flickered 20 to 30 times. It made people's eyes blurry but at the same time it also created a howling air gust.

"My brain cells have strengthened and I can contemplate the brain of the universe. My hypnosis techniques should be stronger, I'll check it out. I'll see if I can hypnotise the outlaws in Xu Hua City." Jiang Li went down stairs quietly.

In an alley, Jiang Li was surrounded by three huge men with tattoos.

"Little punk, you better transfer all your money to us or else we can only cut your organs and sell them for money." One bald-headed man flicked the tip of the blade in his hand.

"You people cut people's organs and sell them?" Jiang Li's face changed.

Sure enough, him running around in the streets had aroused the attention of these outlaws. Immediately, he was blockaded off in the alley by the outlaws.

"Your right, a few days ago, we cut a few outsiders and made some decent money hehehe...." One of the men laughed cruelly.

"Lay down!" Jiang Li's hand suddenly waved, "Do you feel very dizzy? Each of you are drunk, you need a good night's sleep...."

His hand moved like snowflakes dropping from the sky and immediately, these three tattooed men couldn't keep their balance as if they were drunk.

Jiang Li looked at the outlaw that was obvious the leader of the three and focused his spirit, "Get up!"

The outlaw struggled for a bit and stood up like a zombie. His eyes were blank as if he was an idiot.

Jiang Li's voice was full of allurement and waved his hands time to time to increase his influence, "You have harmed so many people, do you feel your sins? If you donate your blood money, you can still remedy for your sins...."

"Donate my money..." The tattooed man said dazily, his body was struggling, "No, what sin do I have in robbing people. I only want money. I'll kill whoever wants my money!"

His subconsciousness was resisting fiercely.

"Hmm?" Jiang Li was surprised at his ability to resist. His desire for money had exceeded everything and he was willing to commit crimes and kill people. It was very hard to control these types of people through hypnosis if the hypnotist ordered the person to do something they felt strongly against. This would result in heavy resistance from their subconsciousness and result in a failure in hypnosis.

"I'm your boss, give me your money otherwise you will all die a tragic death...." Jiang Li's tone changed into a very cruel tone. This was also a hypnotist's trick. Change according to the circumstance in order to break the target's subconscious defense.

"No.... boss, you can't do this..... It took me so long just to save this much money..." The tattooed man was still drowsy and begged as if he was very fearful of his boss.

"Stop wasting my time, cut his organs down!" Jiang Li said sinisterly once again.

"No, no, boss, I'll give you the money, I'll give you the money..." The tattooed man shook in fear and took out a chip.

"Hurry up and transfer, the account is this...." Jiang Li read out an anonymous account to prevent from being investigated. People could withdraw money from anonymous accounts as long as they had the password.

Under the effect of hypnosis, the man transferred all his money.

"10,000 star coins transferred!"

Jiang Li was surprised to see that the man actually had 10,000 star coins on his card. But afterwards, he knew that the man was a small group leader and was in charge of the group's money.

After the transaction, his eyes shot out glaring beams once again, "Forget what happened, you must remember, you came to this alley and suddenly slept. And then, you lost all your money to an online hacker..."

"Yes.... I slept and all the money disappeared mysteriously. It was stolen by a hacker..." The man repeated Jiang Li's words again and again.

"sleep, sleep...." Jiang Li's voice became soft once again and the man fell down.

He fled the scene rapidly.

In accordance with hypnosis, the man completely forget everything after he woke up.

Hu hu.....

In another alley without people, Jiang Li gasped for breath heavily. Sweat globules dripped from his forehead as if he just fought a life or

death battle. When he was certain it was safe, he entered Deep Sleep to recover.

30 minutes later, he had regained his strength.

“Hypnotising people has a great consumption on spirit and brain power. This is actually a spiritual battle.” Jiang Li recounted the moment he hypnotised the tattooed man for his money. He knew that it was damaging to other people’s spirit and at the same time an overload on himself.

Luckily, his physical capabilities and brain cells had all strengthened and increased.

This type of hypnosis not only did not damage his nervous system but also was instead a practice for his spirit.

“Never mind, I should go back. Although I can earn money through hypnosis here, it was way too dangerous. What if I encountered a squadron of outlaws together. My body of flesh would end up in the same way as that of Illusory Fox’s.” He decided to leave.

Three hours later, Jiang Li got off the floating train. The city in front of his eyes was clean, and people cared about order. Police patrolled inside the train station eyeing and looking out for anyone that could be a suspect. When he left the station, he had to swipe his card and verify his identity.

He felt a sense of security.

At the same time, he was glad he didn't bring the forbidden medication to Xing Hua City, otherwise, he would be exposed by the series of checks and be sent to jail.

"When my power is stronger, I will go there for training again." Jiang Li was satisfied looking at the 20,000 star coins on his card.

Before, he hypnotised some more gangsters and outlaws making them transfer their money to his account. His harvest was rewarding as he received 18,000 star coins.

He actually wanted to pull a big one.

In Xu Hua City, there were many outlaws who were extremely wealthy. Some of them had assets in the millions and tens of millions. But those who could survive in those conditions were extremely strong themselves and couldn't be hypnotized. On top of that, there were large sums of bodyguards beside them. The defense was too strong and Jiang Li wouldn't even be able to go in contact with them.

However, these people had bloodied hands and Jiang Li didn't have any moral burdens when taking their money.

It was night time when Jiang Li arrived at his home.

His sister also came home from school but his brother Jiang Tao trained at the school till very late each night. Sometimes, he didn't even come back home. Therefore, Jiang Li and his sister waited at home for their

parents to come home and cook.

"Little sister, I've earned some money received, here's some pocket money for you." Jiang Li gave Jiang Xuan 3000 star coins.

"Big brother, where did you get all this money from?" Jiang Xuan almost jumped, "Did you make a fortune recently?"

"I've been curing people with hypnosis recently and earned some money." Jiang Li said, "How's your cultivation been going?"

"I bought a lot of supplements to train my body. End of semester test is imminent; my life force must reach 0.8 so that I'm at the top of the class." Jiang Xuan said confidently, "Right, big brother, I heard this end of semester test is the most important one of your school. I heard that the school will devote heavy attention and resources according to the grades of this test. If big brother can acquire a spot in the enrichment class this test, then you're truly strong."

"Don't worry, I will definitely get it." Jiang Li smiled.

He was confident that he could go against anyone in the school.

"Come, what martial arts have you learned, big brother will give you a few pointers." Jiang Li clapped his hands, "If you can get good grades this end of semester test, big brother will reward you with another 5000 star coins."

"Okay, yay!" Jiang Xuan clapped her hands.

[ED Note: Damn MC is so nice just teaching his sister and classmates all day while his little bro is cultivating 24/7. The carefree MC plot armor life:/]

Chapter 28 - Being Investigated

Jiang Xuan clapped her hands, got up and assumed a fighting stance. She practiced one move and form at a time. It was a D ranked [Capture and Brawl Art].

"This [Capture and Brawl Art] pays particular attention to capture. Movements are steady, accurate and fierce but the ones that have a radian and lingering appeal are relatively good. Look at this throat grab. When the arm bends, the shoulder needs to sink down and draw out a curve. Strike in an oval shape as this allows the movement to carry a spinning power, a throat grab by the claw!"

Jiang Li immediately pointed out his sister's flaws.

He demonstrated this martial art, using some techniques from [Twisting Bone Attack].

Indeed, under the guidance of Jiang Li, the power increased a great amount from practice. Every move was mellow and full, unlike how blunt it was previously.

Meanwhile in a villa on the outskirts.

Ha!

Zheng Wenbing was of course practicing his martial skills with a middle-aged man wearing ancient Huaxia style clothes, who evidently appeared to be a martial arts teacher.

The duo fought each other. Zheng Wenbing's attacks were abnormally fierce, putting a D ranked [Rolling Stone Fist] to good use.

But the middle-aged man swayed casually. But no matter how fierce Zheng Wenbing's fighting techniques were, they would not touch the body at all and come whirling off when they touched his fists.

Exhausted, Zheng Wenbing finally stopped, soaked in sweat.

"Master Wang, I can't do this anymore." He huffed and puffed.

"Your physique is too poor. If you want to upgrade your life force to level one, you will need a miracle." Master Wang said, "Even I, Wang Daorong, have no way for you to have instant success."

"Master Wang, you are the martial arts teacher that my father hired at a high salary. I also ask you to pass on the best method to practice. I must upgrade my life force to level 1 at all costs for this week's test." Zheng Wenbing said through gritted teeth.

"No such possibility, the time is too short." Wang Daorong shook his head, "The Wang family is a family of ancient martial arts. We already have a very thorough understanding with regard to martial arts from the beginning of Hua Xia to the Galactic era now. You must grasp them yourself no matter what martial skill it is. Unless you start from now and enter the second stage of Deep Sleep! Otherwise even if you take any Super Protein, the body cannot absorb it, and on the contrary you will have excessive nutrition."

"Is there really no way?"

"You can only depend on yourself and control the heart. However, here I have Wang family's ancient spiritual practice technique that I can teach you." Wang Daorong put his hands behind his back, setting an imposing appearance. He was definitely not someone who should be trifled with.

"Okay!" Zheng Wenbing was overjoyed. Just at this time the phone rang, he pressed, and a man appeared, "Brother Bin, the matters you wanted to me to investigate is all clear and have already been settled. However that Jiang Li is actually a star citizen."

"What? A star citizen, what is going on? How did he suddenly have such an honourable position?" Zheng Wenbing's face suddenly twisted up.

"It seems like that guy participated in a mission of the police agency. He unexpectedly arrested Illusory Fox of the SSRO. The police agency gave him a major meritorious service award."

"How do we deal with a star citizen? What about his parents?" Zheng Wenbing swung his arm firmly, making an explosive sound, "I need to deal with his parents right now to threaten him."

"His parents are very easy to deal with. I am currently making a fake account. You can directly frame his parents of an economic crime and have them arrested today. Go to the police agency to report the case now. They have already begun the investigation and by that time threatening the two brothers will be no effort at all. In the meantime, I'll contact Hua Xu Blackmarket and if the Blackmarket Boss wants, I'll

immediately take the two brothers there to work themselves to the bone for us."

"Not bad. Not bad."

Zheng Wen Bing laughed, "Brother, you really brought me good news."

"Naturally, you can give Jiang Tao and Jiang Li, the two brothers, a call now. I think the police agency have already summoned their parents. These two brothers have an extremely strong life force. The Blackmarket Boss really likes them too." The voice from the phone was very sinister.

"Hahaha..." Zheng Wenbing hung up, "Jiang Li, Jiang Tao, you two brothers are dead. Of course I won't actually let you both die. With such strong fighting abilities between the two of you, I can use you two to earn myself some money."

"Illusory Fox?" Wang Daorong did not care about these small matters, however his eyes twinkled when he heard the two words 'Illusory Fox'.

"Other members of the SSRO..."

At home, Jiang Xuan stopped after she just finished learning a martial skill. Seeing how the sky outside was completely dark, she couldn't help but ask, "Why haven't mum and dad come home yet?"

"Yeah, mum and dad should have long come back by this time." Jiang Li knitted his brows.

Jiang Li had an ominous feeling.

His thoughts have always been accurate.

Not only could controlling your breath for a long time develop the human body cells, it could even develop the brain, the sixth sense.

Dingdong, Dingdong...

The doorbell reverberated.

"Mum and dad have come back!" Sister Jiang Xuan went to open the door excitedly.

But the door opened, and instead a few expressionless public officials in police uniforms appeared. "Is this Jiang Zhendong's house?"

"Yes it is." Seeing his sister already become deathly pale, Jiang Li walked outside.

"You are Jiang Zhendong's child?" A public official took out a piece of paper.

"Yes I am." Jiang Li replied maintaining a calm composure.

"Your parents are being suspected of the misappropriation of the company assets and have now already been reported to the police to

investigate. According to the regulations, they will be in custody for fifteen days. During this period, an investigation will be conducted in regards to their crime" A public officer handed a piece of paper to Jiang Li. It was the investigation order.

"No..." Jiang Xuan shrieked.

"Enough, calm down sister." Jiang Li pulled his younger sister in, "Sorry, my sister has not yet reached adulthood, she can be very emotional. According to the rules, this doesn't count as judicial intervention right."

"This doesn't count." A few public officials saw how calm he was and nodded their heads. One of them said, "It doesn't count as judicial intervention. We have already sent the investigation order. You can hire a lawyer and apply to see the suspect. Never conduct private acts to interfere the judicial. You should have learnt about these law courses. Also it is only an investigation right now, we have to wait for the investigation results to see if there was a crime."

"Okay. I understand." Jian Li already calmed down as he watched these people leave.

"Brother, what do we do? Our parents would not do something like that. They must have been set up by someone. What do we do?" Jiang Xuan started to cry, "Call brother, he will definitely have a way."

"No!" Jiang Li eyes suddenly flashed, "We cannot call him, he has an impetuous temperament. If by any chance he does anything, it will not be good. I feel like we are falling into a trap, and what happens if this matter affects his studies? Mum and dad will definitely not want us to tell him as well. Also in regards to this matter, they will call us. Since there has been

no call, they just fear that we will divert our attention.

"Then what do we do?" Jiang Xuan didn't have any idea. She was a teenager after all.

"There is no doubt that someone framed our parents." Jiang Li thought for a bit, and appeared to be very calm. "Having defended readily at all times, it finally came. It appears that it is Zheng Wenbing who is causing all this mischief? Last time, they threatened me using our parents, saying that he'll make them lose their jobs. I didn't think he'll use such ruthless means. However, I have a method. Don't worry, let me make a call."

He had taken precautions long before and it finally came.

Jiang Li's sister was so anxious that she nearly cried, but looking at Jiang Li calmly making a call, she also gradually quietened down.

Dididi...

The call went through. It was Manager Lei.

"Hi Brother Jiang Li, what can I do for you?" Manager Lei's virtual portrait appeared, "I must really thank you this time. Miss Xue Bier is about to recover completely. I have already reported to the chairman. There will great thanks after Miss has fully recovered."

He was now very warm towards Jiang Li, and his attitude had gotten better.

"No need for thanks, I actually need you to do me a favour."

The company that Jiang Li's parents work for was a subsidiary of Lei Company and Manager Lei was a big manager at Lei Company. Last time Zheng Wen Bing said he'll make his parents lose their jobs, but Jiang Li took precautions long ago. Now he immediately called when something happened.

"What favour? I will definitely help!" Manager Lei was eager to build rapport.

"It's like this..." Jiang Li recounted what happened, "I will leave this matter in your hands. If Manager Lei has anything in the future I will not hesitate to help despite how difficult it may be.

"What? There is such a matter? Simply reckless!" Manager Lei said fiercely, "Wait, I will go check immediately and bail out your parents first! Don't worry brother, nothing will happen to them. I can not say if matters like this happened at other companies but I can settle it at my own subsidiary company in one word. Wait half an hour!"

"Okay Manager Lei. I'll wait for your good news."

Jiang Li knew that Manager Lei was very capable and he also managed the company's internal affairs. To order merely a subsidiary company was simply too easy.

"Let's go to the police station to see mum and dad. According to the

general procedure, they only will be in questioning first to assist the investigation. Everything will be ok. The laws nowadays are already very perfect, any police will act according to the rules."

"Don't let brother know about this matter. I fear that he will rage. I know who framed our parents. If it is as expected, that person will very likely call in a while."

Half an hour later.

Dididi...

Manager Lei Dong called once again, "Brother Jiang, the matters have already been sorted. Your parents have been released on bail and I have successfully started investigating using the company's powers. In our initial findings, it was the company's superior who set this up. We have already reported the findings to the police and a subpoena is being carried out. In addition, I sent people to send your parents back home. At the same time, I will arrange for them to enter Lei Company's parent company, and promote their position to act as compensation."

Jiang Li hastily expressed his gratitude, "Thank you. Thank you."

"It is our company's dereliction of duty that something like this happened. Fortunately you warned us otherwise scandals would have occurred." Lei Dong Lian quickly said, "It is a must to compensate your parents. You can give them a call now."

"Okay. I will call now."

Jiang Li dialed his father's number.

Sure enough, the call went through and the sound of his father's voice came through, "It's Jiang Li right? You wanted to ask why we still haven't returned home when it's this late? Your mother and I have a few matters to deal with. A slight problem arose regarding the company's finances. We are cooperating with the police to help investigate. Now things are clear, we have already discussed the issue of compensation with the company and in a while the company's car will take us back home. It will take approximately an hour. If you and your sister are hungry, go out to eat yourselves, don't wait for us."

His father's words were very gentle.

Jiang Li let out a sigh of relief.

Dididi...

An unfamiliar number rang just as he hung up on his father.

Jiang Li pressed the button.

Suddenly a virtual portrait appeared in front of him. It was Zheng Wen Bing.

"It really is you, Zheng Wenbing!" Jiang Li's guess was confirmed. He was very calm because his father is fine now.

"Don't get angry Jiang Li." Zheng Wenbing laughed evilly, pleased with himself. "Presumably you have already gotten the notice from the police? Your parents are being investigated? They really have a lot of courage to actually dare to misappropriate the company's funds."

"Zheng Wen Bing, you have touched my bottom line."

Jiang Li's words came jumping out through the gaps of his teeth.

"It's you who touched my bottom line?" Zheng Wenbing said with a sinister tone, "Jiang Li, you actually dared to slap me in the face. I have already said that I will not use force with you. Only boors will fight in this society."

Jiang Li had long calmed down and started recording. "Was it you who let others frame my parents?"

"Your parent's matters have nothing to do with me. They misappropriated the company's funds, that company isn't even mine, what does it have to do with me? However we were once classmates, I can only help you out!" Zheng Wenbing answered rigorously as if he knew that Jiang Li was recording. "No more nonsense, come out immediately. Meet me in the private room on the 9th at the East gate street within half an hour. Also you need to convince your brother to work for me properly and apologise to me. If he doesn't listen, you should know what the consequences are!"

"Wait, I am coming." Jiang Li put down the phone.

Chapter 29 - Huge Compensation 1

"Big brother, are you really going to see Zheng Wenbing?"

"Of course." Jiang Li reassured her, "Little sister, stay home and wait for mum and dad." He walked out of the door.

In a luxurious box, Zheng Wenbing, Zhang Yue and Yang Wu were drinking together. They had a few ladies by their sides drinking with them. They were laughing out loud as if everything was under their control.

"Bing brother, you're really good with the ideas. You turned Jiang Li into an obedient puppy, when he comes here later on, just watch how we humiliate him." Zhang Yue's tone was cruel. He was originally the class captain and was high above everyone else. Unexpectedly, a Jiang Li popped out of nowhere and knocked him unconscious in front of Lara making him lose all his face.

This time, with the help of Zheng Wenbing's shenanigans, he could get his revenge. He was planning to humiliate Jiang Li when he arrives.

The door sounded.

The three men sat up but the person who entered wasn't Jiang Li and was a bulky man instead. His countenance was cold and he wore black clothes tailored very precisely to his body. His body gave off a sense of explosive power. What was more amazing was that his temperament was

full of battle Qi. His eyes appeared as though they could pierce people's spirits at any time.

Two attendants wearing singlets followed behind him. They were also teeming with ferocity as they stood calmly without speaking.

"Boss Sha is here." Zheng Wenbing stood up hurriedly and shook hands with him.

Subsequently he introduced, "They are my two brothers, Zhang Yue and Yang Wu. This is Boss Sha of the underground boxing arena of Xu Hua city. He came specially to cooperate with us."

Boss Sha swooped his hands, "Zheng Wenbing, where are the two boxers you said you were going to introduce to me? I want to see them. If they really can fight, I can pay a higher price for them and we can even talk about match shares. However, black market boxing has a extremely high fatality rate. The boxer you find must be willing to fight otherwise I don't want to be dealing with problems."

"No problem, both of their life forces are 0.9. They'll definitely put on a good show, how bout it?" Zheng Wenbing laughed, "They're two brothers, obediently controlled by me. They don't dare to rebel against me."

"That's good then." Boss Sha cracked his knuckles and moved slightly as his iron like muscles bulged, "Where are they, I need to verify them personally."

"Don't be hasty, they'll be here soon."

Zheng Wenbing had a cruel and playful look on his face.

30 minutes later, Jiang Li came to the door. He pushed the door open and saw Zheng Wenbing, Zhang Yue and Yang Wu in the room as well as Boss Sha and his two attendants.

He didn't know boss Sha but from his bulky figure and ferocity, he could tell that boss Sha was not a friendly person.

"Zheng Wenbing, you are so contemptible using these shenanigans!" Jiang Li stared at everyone and said it word by word.

"Contemptible?" Zheng Wenbing laughed, "I told you, you won't be able to beat me. What now, you're all soft?"

"Jiang Li, you humiliated me. I will take my revenge 100 folds." Zhang Yue stood up suddenly and wanted to release his spitefulness.

"Wait." Zheng Wenbing waved his hand, "Brother, don't be hasty. You won't gain anything from beating him up. Let's force him to become an underground boxer. That's the way to earn money. He isn't a person now, he's just a commodity. Boss Sha, you may check him."

"Okay, I'll let you go for now. You better fight well in the underground arenas otherwise, your parents are going to suffer in the prison! Right now, your parents are just being investigated but soon they will be apprehended." Zhang Yue sat back down and had a face full of satisfaction.

"This is the product you recommend me?" Boss Sha looked at Jiang Li and signalled with his hands, "A Hong, go up and test him. See how his battle experiences are."

"Yes, boss!"

The man called A Hong walked up and suddenly leaped like a ferocious leopard in front of Jiang Li. He smashed out his fist.

D rank martial arts, [Heart Seeking Fist]!

Jiang Li didn't even look and thrust his fist in retaliation. He also used a D rank martial arts, [Military Exploding Fist Thrust]. He extended his arms seemingly softly but bringing a concussive force with it.

Their fists clashed like lightning in the air

Ka Cha Ka Cha.....

The attendant A Hong's whole arm was fractured. His body flew backwards and smashed onto the table spilling the wine on the floor.

"What?" Boss Sha rose up sharply, "What do you want to do?"

"Nothing? I'm just defending myself." Jiang Li folded his arms and looked at ease.

"Very strong." Boss Sha's eyes beamed as though he found a treasure, "He can earn big money for me, Zheng Wenbing, he is good material. We can sign a contract."

"Very well." Zheng Wenbing face Jiang Li and said, "Jiang Li, from now on your life doesn't belong to you. You are underground arena Boss Sha's henchman. Go apply for exit at the school and then follow Boss Sha to fight at his underground arena every day and earn money for me. Do you understand? This way, your parents will be fine for the moment."

"What are you guys talking about? How come I don't understand?" Jiang Li's face suddenly smiled.

"Jiang Li!" Zheng Wenbing smashed his hands on the table, "Looks like you don't shed a tear until you see the coffin. Looks like I need to ring my brother to greet your parents in the police department."

Beep Beep Beep Beep.....

At this moment, his phone rang.

Zheng Wenbing smiled bleakly and took out his phone, he answered it and immediately a person appeared. He looked like a careers manager, however, his face was pallid, "Bing brother, things went wrong. I don't know why but the big manager of Xue Corporation Lei Dong suddenly started investigating this matter. He went through all the records and found out I faked it immediately. Now, I'm being called to him, hurry and use your connections to bail me out. If I'm apprehended, there will be serious consequences!"

His figure disappeared thereafter.

Hearing this voice, everyone in the room except Jiang Li felt oppressed and anxious.

There was big trouble.

"Zheng Wenbing, my parents are already home resting." Jiang Li said slowly, "As expected, it is you who set my parents up. How are we going to deal with this? I have recorded everything already. With Lei Dong's investigation results, the evidence is clear and I'm afraid you will be going to the jail for a walk this time."

This phone call made Zheng Wenbing's face change rapidly.

"Head manager Lei Dong of the Xue Corporation!" Zheng Wenbing knew of Lei Dong. He was a significant figure who had a lot of power in the Xue Corporation. As for his friend, he was just the CEO of a branch company. There was a huge difference in rank between them.

"Bing brother..... what do we do?" Zhang Yue and Yang Wu was dumbfounded.

"I'm sorry." Jiang Li spoke once again, "Zheng Wenbing, coincidentally I have some connections with people in the Xue Corporation. You heard the phone call too. This is so unfortunate, you had a great future ahead of you but now you're going to jail."

"Jiang Li. You!"

Zheng Wenbing suddenly signaled Boss Sha, "Boss Sha capture him!"

"Zheng Wenbing, it seems you have played with me on this matter. You said it was a boxer who was obedient to you but things turned out like this. I came here for a deal not for a kidnapping. In Xing Hua city, I'm a good citizen who follows the law." Boss Sha could easily see what was going on and stood up facing Jiang Li, "Brother, I'm just an outsider, everything is irrelevant to me. This is my card, maybe we can cooperate in business. I'm from the Boxing King Corporation of Xu Hua City. Let's be friends. I'll let what you did to my men go."

"Okay, you're an outsider, I won't trouble you."

Jiang Li took the card and signaled them to leave with his hands.

Boss Sha eyed his other attendant who carried the injured man on his back and they left the room together.

Boss Sha didn't want to be involved in this. Xing Hua City wasn't like the black market in Xu Hua City, there were laws here.

"You girls leave too. What happened today does not concern you." Jiang Li waved his hands.

The girls were scared shitless already and left crawling and rolling.

"Jiang Li, I couldn't tell you had more means than your brother!" Zheng Wenbing had calmed down at this moment, "But don't think you have won now. There will be a time when you will regret this."

"Bing brother, there's no point in talking to him. Let's capture him together. Audio recording evidence? There won't be evidence if we destroy it." Yang Wu suddenly walked up, "All you have to do is get your man released and everything will be set."

He had always wanted to fight with Jiang Li and was eager to try.

Peng!

He took a stance and abruptly took a step forward, his palms reached for the top of Jiang Li's head with crushing force!

C rank martial arts, [Great River Palm].

The sun befall on the long river.

Jiang Li didn't even look as his hands pushed upwards and parried Yang Wu's hand. Next, his other palm flung outwards suddenly.

Pia!

It was another slap and it was harder than when he slapped Zheng Wenbing. It was so hard that it made Yang Wu spin in circles. Yang Wu was very dizzy and just fell down on his butt.

Before, the Super Protein injection, he was no match for Jiang Li. Now, it wasn't even necessary to note their difference.

"You people are completely outmatched." Jiang Li folded his arms after smacking Yang Wu out cold, "Zheng Wenbing, Zhang Yue, Yang Wu, this time, your fates will be very tragic."

"Jiang Li, what do you dare to do to us? This is a legality society!" Zheng Wenbing's eyes betrayed the horror deeply rooted in his heart. He knew things went wrong ever since Jiang Li called Lei Dong brother.

Although his family was wealthy, they were nothing compared to Xue Corporation. Manager Lei Dong had a lot of power as he was the head manager of the company. He was more connected than Zheng Wenbing. The speed with which he dealt with matters completely crushed Zheng Wenbing's confidence.

If it was just Jiang Li's family which was the typical normal citizen, then he could completely toy with them but when things involved Lei Dong, it got out of hand.

Jiang Li was connected to Lei Dong and all Jiang Li had to do was use his mouth and his parents were rescued. How was Zheng Wenbing going to play with Jiang Li?

He felt like that he had lost control of everything.

"Legality society." After hearing news of his parents, Jiang Li seemed

very relaxed, "I won't do anything to you people, but you set my parents up. Naturally, I will use the legitimate process to deal with you. What the law says will be done."

Although, he really wanted to kill Zheng Wenbing, his future would be destroyed if he killed or tortured in this society. His parents wouldn't want him to do that as well. Even then, he only slapped Yang Wu's face but didn't injure him or break his bones. He had to do this so they could hold nothing against him.

Since when he was young, his parents like to settle things quietly. They would rather retreat when in trouble.

If Jiang Li beat them up, it would give them something to use against him. At the same time, his parents would be worried about him. However, he was definitely not going to let the three go either. He was thinking of legitimate measures to end them forever!

Of course, he had to make them pay adequate compensation.

Chapter 30 - Huge Compensation 2

Jiang Li wasn't impulsive; he knew that their families had power and authority. If he beat them to serious injuries or paralysis, there would be a lot of trouble for him. After all, despite having some connections with Lei Dong, their relationship wasn't that firm.

Lei Dong had already helped him a lot.

"Zheng Wenbing, just you wait, you're about to go in jail."

After Jiang Li finished this sentence, he turned and was about to leave.

"Wait!" Zheng Wenbing calmed down at this moment.

"What, you don't plan on making me stay do you?" Jiang Li turned back, his cold expression was freezing their hearts.

"Jiang Li, we don't have that much feud between us, why take things so seriously?" Zheng Wenbing's tone was smoothed downs "If you use your connections to apprehend us, I can tell you right now that that won't be possible. Our family has some power. But there is no need to make the fish die and the net split. We're all year 12 students, we have a great future ahead of us. It wouldn't do both of us any good if we get into trouble. How about this, as a symbol of my sincere apology, we can compensate you with money and what happened before can all be forgotten."

"All be forgotten!"

Of course Jiang Li wasn't going to forget things but he wanted to hear what they had to say. His intention was to rack some compensation.

"We'll do it this way. I'll give you 10000 star coins compensation and everything between us will be even." Zheng Wenbing gave out a number straight away. He believed this sum of money would be adequately enticing.

"10000 star coins..." Jiang Li gazed at him in contempt, "Zheng Wenbing, you think I haven't seen big money before or are you shooing me away like a beggar?"

"Then how much do you want?" Zhang Yue yelled, "Your whole family probably isn't even worth 10000 star coins! How can you be so greedy?"

"Really?" Jiang Li pressed his chip slightly and a voice sounded from it, "Your current balance is 19000 star coins. This month's expenditure is 114,000 star coins...."

"What?"

When the three heard this electronic statement, they almost jumped. He actually spent 120,000 star coins this month. Even they couldn't imagine spending that much money in a month.

"You think I would care about your 10000 star coins?" Jiang Li swiped his hands, "Zheng Wenbing you underestimate me. You think such little money can just settle things? Whatever, even if I continue this, you three may have connections that will avoid you jail but this will be on your record. I believe you won't be able to apply for Astral University. I can just destroy your future."

"You....." Zheng Wenbing was scared about this. If Jiang Li pursued he was scared of the trouble. This was the last year for Astral University making it the utmost important. Even if there was no serious problem, it wasn't worth to get himself into trouble.

"Then how much do you want, give me a number!" Zhang Yue took a step forward, "I know you want money."

"Hmph, you guys can wait, I have to call my bro Lei Dong to determine whether or not I let you go." Jiang Li walked out leaving Zhang Yue, Zheng Wenbing and them to look amongst themselves. Their faces were so bleak that water could drip out.

Jiang Li still had to consult Lei Dong on this matter, after all, he was more experienced.

"What's up? Jiang Li brother?" Lei Dong asked hearing the telephone.

"Lei Bro, this is what happened....." Jiang Li told him what had just happened, "I want to send them into jail but they suggested to settle things with compensation, what should I do?"

"Ah...." Lei Dong thought, "Jiang Li bro, I know you really want to send them into jail is that right?"

"Yes." Jiang Li nodded, "I even want to kill them, they touched my bottom line."

"Don't be impulsive." Lei Dong said hurriedly, "Actually, you can sue them with the proper customs but I don't support his way. First, the process is very complicated and will cause you a lot of trouble. You're in the stage to be focusing on your studies. Second, as soon as the lawsuit begins, Zheng Wenbing and their families will do something desperate which would be detrimental to both sides. That isn't worth it. Third, we captured the manager of a branch company, there is no direct evidence vindicating this is organized by Zheng Wenbing. Even if he was judged as guilty, all he did was force your parents to be held back for ten days. This would only leave a bad record. On top of that, your parents weren't harmed and were only interrogated in the police department so if you asked for compensation, the court would only support you slightly. I recommend you settle things privately, ask for huge sums of compensation. I believe they would agree. You have a great future ahead of you, don't waste your time on a few scums."

"Thanks Lei bro, how much should I ask for?"

Jiang Li nodded his head secretly. Lei Dong was a manager after all and could see much farther ahead than he could. What he had said was fact. Jiang Li's parents hadn't been harmed. Everything was done according to legal processes.

"300,000, each of their families can pay 100,000 star coins as compensation. But you should be careful with your words, you must make

them bring it up or they might bite you back accusing you of blackmailing.” Lei Dong warned once again, “I’ll send a lawyer to deal with them.”

“They can accuse me of blackmailing?” Jiang Li was warned and felt that could be possible, “I recorded a video just then that could be used as evidence.”

“Yes, keep it safe. I’ll let the lawyer discuss with them, everything will be fine. From now on, you just wait and don’t talk about the compensation with them.” Lei Dong was deservedly the big manager. These small trickeries were child’s play for him.

“Thank you, Lei Bro.”

“No worries, your hypnosis is so strong. My son is still in primary school, he may need hypnosis in the future. The competition is very intense now,” Lei Dong knew it was worth it to invest in such a hypnosis expert.

Huang Dong!

Jiang Li pushed the door and entered back into the room after the phone, Zheng Wenbing stood up, “Jiang Li, just what do you want?”

“Nothing, Lei bro said, this involves the integrity of the Xue Corporation and almost resulted in a scandal. He is going to sue you. But we’re all students, so why destroy your future? Lei Dong’s lawyer is on the way right now, he will arrive in approximately half an hour. You guys can talk with him.” Jiang Li didn’t even bring up the compensation if case he was

accused of blackmailing, "I recommend you notify your families so we can negotiate a resolution.

Zheng Wenbing's face changed, "Jiang Li, you're very ruthless."

"Killing and fighting is what brainless idiots do. This is a legality society, we handle things with the appropriate procedures. What should be done shall be done." Jiang Li said slowly as he sat.

Yang Wu and Zhang Yue didn't call their families. They knew this couldn't be known to their families or they will receive heavy criticism and be in a worse situation.

Half an hour later, the lawyer arrived.

This was a scholarly middle aged man with glasses. He shook hands with Jiang Li immediately as he entered, "Jiang Li, hello, I'm the lawyer of the Xue Corporation."

"Hello, you will be in control of how to resolve this discord. I don't know law so I will let you deal with them." Jiang Li said.

"No problem." The lawyer turned around, "You guys are Zheng Wenbing, Yang Wu and Zhang Yue am I correct?"

"What do you want?" Zheng Wenbing stood up looking anxious.

"Our Xue Corporation has acquired evidence that you and the manager

of a branch company have conspired to embezzle the property of our corporation, frame other's parents and conspired with an underground boxing boss to sell people. This has accumulated to serious criminal offense. We hold evidence and can sue you at any time." The lawyer said eloquently, "According to the 3751th law of the people, the victim may choose not to sue if you can acquire his forgiveness. Because, this isn't a public case, it may be resolved in private."

"You said so much just to ask for compensation, tell me, how much do you want?" Zheng Wenbing already knew their intentions, "I'm admit defeat this time. 10000 star coins, is that enough?"

"This time, that manager has caused significant losses to our company in terms of finance. We have lost at least 300,000 star coins. Our company must chase back this sum." The lawyer said.

Jiang Li listened on at the side. He felt that a lawyer was indeed a lawyer. The lawyer didn't mention anything about how much they wanted but instead brought up how much loss the company has suffered.

There was no way for people to capture anything against him.

He was good.

If Jiang Li negotiated with them himself, he would ask for 300,000 star coins straight away and that would put him under the suspect of blackmailing.

"300,000" Zheng Wenbing, Yang Wu and Zhang Yue almost jumped,

“Why don’t you go rob someone.”

“I said our company has lost 300,000 and we must have this sum back.” The lawyer’s tone was cold, “Or perhaps you have conspired with the manager of the branch company and have also received a part of our company’s money? If so, I recommend you return it to us and we can choose not to sue. Otherwise, we can only chase it back with the legal procedure.”

“You.....” Zheng Wenbing couldn’t find any flaws in the lawyer’s words.

Yang Wu and Zhang Yue also stared at Jiang Li and the lawyer deadily. There was nothing they could do.

“Fine, 300,000 then!” After long thought, Zheng Wenbing made up his mind, “We will compensate. Hopefully, we can come to an agreement and settle things.”

“After, the company’s loss have been returned, we can choose not to sue.” The lawyer took out a document, “Sign this and make the transfer.”

“Zhang Yue, Yang Wu, we will each pay for 100,000.” Zheng Wenbing stared at the agreement and negotiated.

“Bing brother, that’s all my savings....” Zhang Yue’s heart ached at the loss. 100,000 star coins was not a small sum for him. This was all his pocket money he had saved up since he was small. Although his family was millionaire, they couldn’t stock all the family’s resources on him.

It was decent enough that they could even bring out 100,000 each.

"Don't talk bullshit, let's get this over and done with first." Zheng Wenbing said.

"I need to ask my big brother for 50,000." Yang Wu hurried to his phone.

Jiang Li stared at the three coldly as they tried to gather the sum. He didn't say anything, 300,000 couldn't ease his hatred. If there was the opportunity, he would make sure they would suffer heavily.

In just a moment, Ding Dong! The three had successfully transacted and the lawyer made them sign the agreement. After they left, there was an extra 300,000 star coins on Jiang Li's account.

Jiang Li was going to give the lawyer some tips but the lawyer quickly shook his hands: "You're Lei bro's brother, how can I do this? I will try to accomplish what Lei bro has set me to do. These three are only students, they don't have much societal experience. Taking them on is easy."

"Thank you, thank you." Jiang Li expressed his gratitude once again.

"Fuck! Fuck! Now the three of us are all broke!"

The three were all furious on their way back.

"Bing brother, are we just going to be blackmailed like this. Is there nothing we can do?" Zhang Yue was unkempt.

"What can we do? I was going to talk with Jiang Li and make him say a price and then try to get him to say some words that he shouldn't say. That way, he can accuse him of blackmail. But who knew that a lawyer came and his words didn't have any flaws!" Zheng Wenbing felt all his tricks were unable to be used.

"What fucking company loss? They just want to blackmail us." Zhang Yue smashed his fist on the wall.

"Their losses could easily be forged. Even though we knew we were being blackmailed, there was nothing we could do." Yang Wu's head was still fazed. It was a huge humiliation for him to be slapped by Jiang Li but he didn't dare to go take revenge.

"Wait for it! Our feud with the Jiang Li brothers is to the death!" Zheng Wenbing bit his teeth hard.

Translated by XianXiaWorld

Chapter 31 - The Final Exams

Having received a compensation fee of 300,000 star coins, Jiang Li felt like he should utilize this money to its fullest.

He wanted to buy more Lunar Essence, for its legendary reputation had stood against the test of time, but it was very expensive. 300,000 star coins could barely buy two bottles.

"Hmm I've decided. I'll buy one bottle of Lunar Essence, and give the rest of the money to my parents whilst leave 30,000 to myself. This way I can buy nutrition serums, cat food and also help my sister. I wonder if my brother needs money. I guess I'll also buy some stuff for him. However I must reach a life force of 1 after the final exams before breaking it to my parents, as this way everything will be seem legit. If I tell them now, it would be shocking and unheard of."

Jiang Li came home. The lights in the living room were open, with his parents murmuring lightly. Their murmuring stopped as soon as they saw Jiang Li enter.

"Mum, dad, why were you guys investigated by the company?" Jiang Li acted like he was puzzled, "The police came to our house, scaring little sister and I."

"Don't worry, it was a misunderstanding," Jiang Zhendong hurriedly went to explain, "In fact good fortune came out of this incident, as we have entered the headquarters of the Xue Corporation. We even received

100,000 star coins as a good-will fee. All in all, this incident is over. When Jiang Tao comes home you better not tell him."

Jiang Li's parents didn't know that the problem was solved by Jiang Li.

Originally they had been asked a few question by the police before personnel from the company got them out. They didn't even know the premise of release, and thought they had been reported accidentally.

Jiang Li wouldn't tell his parents anyway though, as he didn't want them to worry.

"Little brother cannot be distracted whilst in spiritual cultivation; otherwise his previous effort would be undone. I won't tell him about this incident."

"You should also work hard and strive to get a life force of 0.8. It will be easy to find a job once you get there," Jiang Zhendong doted, unaware of his son's true power.

Midnight, Jiang Tao came home, and the house was silent. No one knew that a potentially catastrophic incident had been defused by Jiang Li

Everything was at peace.

The second day, in the mountain villa of the Xue Corporation.

Jiang Li consumed a bowl of nutritional liquid and a drop of Lunar Essence in one gulp, and initiated hypnotism. His ten fingers moving

lightly, Xue Bear entered Deep Sleep.

After a few sessions of hypnotism, Xue Bear's face had become lush again, her vitality restored and psychological wounds healed.

Jiang Li came here every day, and would consume large amounts of Green God Nutrition Serum and drops of Lunar Essence to capitalize on the opportunity.

This way, he could contemplate the Brain of the Universe to practice [Spiritual Emperor Seal]. His hypnotism skills have improved substantially, and he had captured some of the essence of hypnotism. His spiritual cultivation had also improved.

His stamina had improved even more. Explosive power could be felt in his every move.

After injecting Super Protein, he had done a body inspection and discovered that all the lost life potential in cells had been recovered.

"Jiang Li, I cannot be more grateful." Liana Xue had a good impression of Jiang Li. She knew her older sister had entered a peaceful sleep by the smile present on her face.

"No worries. I've also gained a lot from drinking your nutrition serums and Lunar Essence," Jiang Li said frankly, "This is a mutually beneficial thing. From today onwards I needn't come anymore, for Xue Bear has completely recovered. Our contract has been fulfilled."

Liana Xue nodded her head. "With your hypnotism skills, acquiring a permit for Secondary Hypnotism would be easy, why don't you try? Secondary Hypnotists are greatly desired, and you're already better than most. If you get better and become a Tertiary Hypnotist, you could even create your own corporation."

If Secondary Hypnotists could get wealthy, Tertiary Hypnotists could become famous and influential stars.

"The final exams are around the next bend, I'll think about it after that." Jiang Li wanted to take the examination for hypnotists as well, but the most important thing right now was the final exams.

After receiving acknowledgment from the school, everything else would come naturally.

Also, his hypnotism skills still needed practice.

Frankly, the only way he could hypnotize people was contemplating the Brain of the Universe and using the [Spiritual Emperor Skill]. If he only uses his hypnotism skills, he probably couldn't even acquire a permit for Apprentice Hypnotism.

From this, it could also be seen how hard it was to become a hypnotist.

"Oh yeah, why don't you become a hypnotist?"

Liana Xue had the same level of spiritual cultivation as Jiang Li – the second stage of Deep Sleep. In theory, she could also become an

Apprentice Hypnotist.

"I've tried, but it's very hard. Plus becoming a hypnotist means you will come in contact with all types of people. I'm not used to that kind of environment." Liana Xue shook her hand.

She could not become a hypnotist, as hypnotists must learn how to project the spirit to create great charm. Most people have trouble reaching this point. Not all strong men become masters at close combat, and in a similar manner not all people with strong spiritual cultivation could become hypnotists.

In the following days, besides cultivation all Jiang Li did was still cultivation

.

Though Liana Xue's had recovered, Jiang Li lost the chance to consume nutrition. Fortunately he wasn't totally lacking in the supplement faculty for Zhen Wenbing had compensated 300,000 star coins, and in addition to the money he earned from capturing Illusory Fox he could afford to buy Green God Nutrition Serums, which were a thousand star coins per bottle.

Zhen Wenbing had been low-key, and there were no perceivable schemes.

However Jiang Li remained vigilant. He trained hard, and with sufficient nutrition, his progress was surprisingly fast.

He didn't go to the black market to buy Lunar Essence because he

could not bring it home, and must consume at the place. It was a bit wasteful to drink it down in one sitting. This thing was best consumed in drops. Finishing a bottle over a period of ten days was the ideal way to utilize it to full effect.

Finally the days of the exams came over.

On the 30th of December 2250, after his family finished eating breakfast, Jiang Li arrived at school.

The atmosphere was tense, and all students silently prepared.

Whoever's score stood out amongst the year 12s would receive special attention from the school. The school would give all kinds of support including scholarships, resources and privileged access to some areas. There was even a chance to enter the army to get combat experience.

The school would also try to get students in Astral University at all costs.

All the students of Astral University were the elite of mankind, and were destined to become great leaders. The more students that got in from the school, the more famous it would become. Later, the students would also give donations and help the school out.

In the whole of humanity, there were countless universities competing withfor Astral University.

If Jiang Li could get a place amongst the elite students, even Zhen Wenbing wouldn't dare touch him, for the school would be the first to punish him.

A lot of school officials were attentive to the results of the exam. Even government officials had vested interest.

In a big class room of the school.

"Students, today is the final exams. I'm sure everyone knows the rules by now. Sit in front of the holographic computer, and there are questions there. The mornings are for humanitarian subjects whilst the afternoon is for physical tests. The overall score is indicative of your life force."

In the classroom, a holographic computer appeared before every seat, and a systematic voice came from within.

At this moment, even the dearest of friends would not extend their greetings and banter. Everyone was nervous.

Jiang Li felt quite relaxed. Sitting in front of the holographic computer, he steadied his breathing.

The bell went.

He took out his student chip and swiped it on the screen, entering personal details. Immediately many subtitles popped up; language, history, math, physics, biology, psychology, law, astrology... There were a total of thirteen.

All these subjects were hard, as they were implemented by the

Education Department to scour for talented people.

Jiang Li's fingers flew on the screen, answering all questions with great accuracy. His knowledge base was very broad, and since entering Fetal Respiration and training the [Spiritual Emperor Seal], he possessed strong spiritual cultivation which made it easy to remember everything he sees. His comprehension skills also defied the ordinary, and as such any humanitarian subject was a piece of cake.

Three hours later, all the questions were completed.

Beeeeep... The screen immediately popped up with a score.

Full marks.

There were a total of more than a thousand questions combined in the humanitarian subject tests, including complex calculation questions that could not be answered in a short time period. But to Jiang Li it was easy.

"Finally finished the test. Thank god it was full marks," Jiang Li let out a sigh of relief.

At this moment, his score had been transmitted to another holographic screen in the school, with many teachers looking on.

"What! Only three hours to finish the questions, and also full marks?"

"Even theory was full marks?"

Typically, the tests took five hours. Even those that were speedy with fast mental capabilities would take a minimum of four hours to complete the test.

Those that could get full marks whilst complete the tests in three hours were a rare breed. The tests were marked by the computer, and so there was no room for cheating.

This result was part of the student profile. In later years when the student enters the army, or goes for a position in the government or a big company, such stats were taken into consideration.

“Could he be cheating?”

In the surveillance room, a few teachers looked at each other. Even the principal furrowed his brows.

The principal ordered, “Play the tape again. It’s impossible to cheat in front of a holographic computer.”

“Yes Sir!” A teacher replayed the video recording, speeding it up a tiny bit. It could be seen that Jiang Li’s fingers flew on the holographic screen, answering the questions with almost no time lapses in between, indicative of great confidence and knowledge.

To be honest, cheating was impossible in tests, especially one as official as this.

"His answering speed is insane, almost incomprehensible." A teacher praised, "Look at those complex calculation questions. He immediately found the compatible formula to solve it. His reactions are extremely fast."

"Who is this student?"

The principal asked one of the teachers.

"He's called Jiang Li, with a life force of 0.7. He seems to be a normal enough student, I wonder how did he suddenly get so fast?" A teacher found the relevant data.

"Wait..."

The principal was shocked upon realizing that there was a star on Jiang Li's citizen chip. "This student is a one star citizen?"

"Yes indeed. How did he get it?"

"To think he would be a one star citizen. What contributions did he make to mankind?"

"Sir, you're a one star citizen as well right. But that honor title was due to producing many talented young men. To think this student would have it as well..."

The teachers murmured amongst themselves.

Jiang Li had never been noticed before. Such surges of talent would obviously cause an uproar.

"This student is talented; however humanitarian subjects don't mean much. The more important one is the physical tests," the principal continued, "Don't contact him yet. After he finishes the afternoon examinations will we give a judgment upon his overall talent."

"Not bad, looks like my effort weren't wasted."

Jiang Li yawned and stretched, "I've probably captivated the attention of the school with my speed and score. However that's of no matter. Wait until the afternoon, I will shock them again!"

Chapter 32 - Martial Expert Trial

A whole morning of tests slowly passed. Some students were exhilarated whilst others worried.

Even eating in the canteen was not on their minds, because in the afternoon there was an even more important trial - the physical examinations.

In exams 200 years ago, people only looked at the written examination score. Now it was the completely opposite, as only with a strong life force would one be able to take on various jobs. People with weak life forces couldn't even travel in space.

"Jiang Li, how did you go?"

Whilst eating in the canteen, Guo Meng came up to Jiang Li and asked. Jiang Li was drinking a nutrition serum, to which Guo Meng responded with envy.

"To think you'd drink Green God Nutrition Serums so casually! It's a thousand star coins per bottle, did you make a lot of money or something?"

"Come have one as well to recharge your stamina. In the afternoon examinations try do well." Jiang Li casually handed his friend a bottle.

Guo Meng gripped it tightly, in disbelief of his good fortune. "Really?"

"Why would I trick you?" Jiang Li shook his head, "Hurry up and drink it."

"Don't tell me it's fake," Guo Meng ripped the cap open and drank it in one gulp. He immediately felt invigorated. "Sure is a luxury good. I think my stamina has increased considerably."

"That's just an illusion. This type of nutrition serum can only help you if you drink it for long periods of time whilst exercise frequently," Jiang Li smiled. "Oh yeah, are you prepared for the afternoon examinations?"

"I'm fucked. Everything is up to fortune. I mean, Astral University is definitely out of my reach right?" Guo Meng smacked his lips together. "I'm the type of guy that's at the bottom of the class, a frame for the talented to flaunt their power. You look really prepared however, so be sure to kill it and get a good score! When you become famous don't forget your bro!"

"Don't worry man, you already know what kind of character I am," Jiang Li slapped his friend on the back.

"Good luck to you," Guo Meng left hurriedly to adjust his emotional state in preparation for the exam.

Jiang Li was rather calm, because he knew his powers.

The two hour break passed really quickly.

At the time of the examinations, together with other students Jiang Li entered a massive sports stadium that was more than 10,000 meters squared. In the middle were rows and rows of machines that tested different stats, including running, punching, kicking...

"Start!"

A student in front of Jiang Li went up to a machine, and after the signal dashed out. 1 second, 2 seconds... The hundred meter sprint took 8 seconds.

He rested for a bit, and started to punch, a continuous stream of a hundred fists. Sweating like crazy, a number finally appeared on the machine: an average punching force of 0.36 tons.

He went on to other tests like kicking, deep squat and weight bearing.

After the series of tests, a line of numbers appeared on a machine, and a robotic voice boomed.

"Overall score, life force of 0.85. Please enter the combat room for the final test."

"Fuckkkk, still couldn't get 0.9! Hopefully I can wrestle some points back in the last test, otherwise receiving attention from the school will be impossible." The student was a bit deflated.

In the end there was the combat test.

This test measured the reflexes of people. If you do well, you could gain points, however if you do bad, you might also lose points.

"Next up, Jiang Li..."

Jiang Li walked up to a giant machine the size of a thirty odd meter squared room.

There were many transaction belts on the machine, used for running. There was also a target for punching.

"Let's see how strong I am!" Taking a deep breath, Jiang Li did a series of movements, mirroring stances in the [Spiritual Emperor Seal]. Immediately he felt himself reach his peak condition, with every cell breathing heavily.

"May the student please start..."

The voice from the machine ushered. Jiang Li stepped on the conveyer belt and the signal to start went off. He dashed out, his footsteps creating the smell of burnt rubber on the belt.

1 second, 2 seconds, 3 seconds, 4 seconds, 5 seconds.

Beeeeep... His hundred meter sprint time for 4.8 seconds!

"What? 4.8 seconds?"

Many teachers saw the result, and came to watch near the machines, speculating that perhaps the machine has malfunctioned.

But Jiang Li cared not of the attention. Resting for a bit, he started the punching test.

He was within the machine, and so no one could enter. They could only watch him run and exert himself from the outside.

Ping ping ping...

His body arched like a bow ready to shoot, with every bone rattling and focusing power on one point, Jiang Li performed the strongest C rank martial technique [Shattering Bone Penetration]!

It was as if the target was hit by a typhoon, shaking left and right. A series of numbers appeared on the screen. Every student had a set amount of time to strike the target a hundred times. This event not only tested punching power but also stamina. Punching a hundred times at full power was very taxing on the body.

Some people couldn't even keep their breath up with the pace they punch at.

Though tired, Jiang Li wasn't huffing and puffing heavily after a hundred strikes.

"An average punching force of 1 ton! Please move on to the other tests..." The holographic computer displayed the data.

This wasn't a test of one punch, but rather the average of a hundred punches. If Jiang Li only had to punch once, the power would be even greater.

The average power of a hundred punches was far from one explosive punch. A typical martial expert would be exhausted after more than ten punches at full power.

"What! Average punching force of 1 ton? This student actually broke the threshold! I wonder how strong he is. He even has a sprint time of 4.8 seconds."

"What's his overall score?"

"Dayum, this is a miracle of the examinations."

"An unexpected contestant."

"Call the principal."

The nearby teachers were in an uproar, because a potential candidate for Astral University had been found.

Miss Blade and Lazy Long were also present. They looked at each other and nodded, as if such results were expected.

A short while later, Jiang Li's kicking, deep squat and weight bearing

scores were out. The holographic computer gave judgment, "The early estimate of the score for this exam is a life force of 1. Now, please enter the combat room to start the next phase."

"Sure enough my life force has reached 1." Jiang Li let a smile come across his face after looking at the results. He did not use his full power in the tests in order to conserve energy for the following combat test. If he failed that, he might get penalized, reducing his life force to 0.99.

The combat tests were carried out in the holographic combat rooms.

This type of place was just like where Zhen Wenbing and Lara Luo trained. After entering, artificial scenery would appear, followed by a person that represented a martial expert. One would fight with him to test their combat prowess.

The fake martial expert was extremely strong, an amalgamation of energy that functioned like a real person. In the short time period of its manifestation, it would have all the attributes of a real person such as breathing, heartbeat, pulse...

This type of technology was extrapolated from the army, and was very advanced. But the energy consumption was great, and only organizations like schools could afford such equipment. However they would only use them during examination periods due to the high costs of maintenance.

Using it for the normal study curriculum was unrealistic.

It was said that the school was spending up 100,000 star coins per hour

in the short period of time of the examinations.

"Student Jiang Li, student number..."

Jiang Li entered the pitch black combat room. He couldn't even see his fingers. Only a voice resonated in the room, "The test starts now. Martial Expert initiated, energy levels sufficient."

Sou!

A ray of light converged, and the scenery changed. Jiang Li found himself in a great grassy plain with trees and flowers everywhere. In the centre of the place stood a man with ancient clothing and a white beard. He even had a long braid. He was not an imposing figure, but rather seemed a bit small and lanky.

But, the old man exuded an indescribable aura that rang with depth.

"Come!"

The old man waved at Jiang Li, as if he was a real ancient martial expert reborn in the current era.

The test had officially begun.

Jiang Li tread carefully, and dared not to move brashly. Circling the martial expert, he came to the backside of the man and leaped out to grab the man's braids, his hands hissing like snakes in the air.

The braid was a weak point.

But, just as his fingers reached the braids, a hand appeared near his wrists and lightly nudged.

The movement was gentle.

Hong! Jiang Li felt like as if he had stepped into the eye of the storm, his movements swayed by a great force. His body spun like an uncoiled spring, his bodily meridians played like the wires of a string instrument.

His ligaments were like a lute. A light touch from the old man made him lose all his combat power.

This was the power of a martial expert.

[Lute Play] of Tai Chi!

Jiang Li didn't even see how the old man had struck him, for his stance gave off not a single flaw. There seemed to be a great and mysterious power within the old man, like the ancient 'qi'.

"[Twisting Bone Attack]!"

Jiang Li knew he was in trouble, and riding on top of his spinning momentum he performed [Boneless Jiu-jitsu]. He angled to the side, and with his hands like knives, slashed towards the neck of the old man.

If it was anyone else that had not learnt [Boneless Jiu-jitsu], the single move [Lute Play] would have defeated them. But Jiang Li's physical

temperament was impressive, and after the battle with Illusory Fox, his battle instincts had also been brought out. After receiving the [Lute Play], he immediately retaliated.

The attack was ferocious and fast, the highest level of combat power Jiang Li could muster.

But the martial expert was faster than him, and shaking his hands as if playing with an invisible spear, he drew an arc in the air upon Jiang Li's hands. The moment they touched, Jiang Li's hands shook and creaked, as if put into a meat grinder that would break his bones.

[Cloud Palm] of Tai Chi!

Ping!

Jiang Li leaped up and viciously kicked at the martial expert's ankle joint in an attempt to save himself.

It was as if there were eyes on the martial expert's legs. They formed a straight posture and kicked back at Jiang Li.

Trapped in both the upper and lower body, Jiang Li fell into a difficult position. If he had no surprises left he would be sent flying with broken ligaments and bones, a tragic outcome.

At this moment, his routine training came into fruition. Twisting his body like snakes and dragons, he dodged ongoing attacks and made an exit in the confrontation.

"[Boneless Dragon Snake Dance]!"

The martial technique saved his life, successfully pulling himself out of the miserable predicament. The old man was like a metal wall with a deep grasp of martial arts. In comparison Jiang Li was leagues behind.

Jiang Li continued to trace backwards, fearful of getting close to the martial expert.

Unfortunately the martial expert was not thrown off so easily. With light and graceful footwork he chased after Jiang Li. Just as Jiang Li had made a progress of more than 10 meters he caught up in one step, a fist already in motion.

The fist was fierce like towering giants, as if it was unstoppable. It completely transformed the figure of an old man into an adult in his prime.

[Tiger Killing Bow] of Tai Chi!

Without even looking Jiang Li knew he could not stop the attack, and chose to evade to the side.

Hai!

The martial expert breathed in deeply and threw another fist, even fiercer than before, blocking all of Jiang Li's escape paths. It was like iron chains across a river, forcing boats to come to a standstill.

"I cannot take it, what do I do? [Boneless Jiujiitsu] is no match. If I take it head on I'll be sent flying and lose all my combat ability!"

Looking at the oncoming fist, Jiang Li's sixth sense predicted the outcome.

At this crucial moment, his heart ascended a state of peace with oneself, and his hands moved like the wind to perform a hand sign of the [Spiritual Emperor Seal]. It was like the wind and clouds, dragons and tigers.

The martial expert's fists came crashing down on his arms, and his hand seal caved inwards on reflex, defusing a lot of the power.

The old man took another step forward, his face expressionless. From his pubic region came a long shriek and he swung another fist!

This fist was completely different to the others. The fierce nature of previous ones became ghastly and ghoulish, disappearing then reappearing. It looked slow, but in fact broke the limits of speed and pounded through Jiang Li's defense and onto his chest.

B rank martial technique [Phantom Entity Punch]!

The three punches were at the limits of mortal power.

Finally, Jiang Li's defense became futile and he was sent flying, stars appearing before his vision. He could not move a single part of his body.

"Beeeeep..." The holographic computer signaled for the trial to stop.
"Combat test over. Combat experience sufficient. Overall life force of 1!"

The martial expert disappeared.

Every minute of its manifestation was of great cost. The school didn't want to waste a single moment.

"Phew..."

Having heard the announcement, Jiang Li let out a sigh of relief. Though he had lost against the fight with the martial expert, and was sent flying, he passed the overall grade and was not deducted points.

His life force had reached 1.

Chapter 33 - Enrichment Class

"This martial arts master is too strong. I saw many people who were sent flying with just one move." Jiang Li was very jealous. If he could have this martial arts master sister at home, his battle skills would at least improve by many folds. However, this thought was impractical.

The whole school couldn't afford it much less his family?

When the computer determined the life force, Jiang Li sighed a breath in relief. He knew this time he was going to be someone the school would focus heavily on.

Normally, a life force of 0.9 would be focused on by the school. As for a life force of 1, that was even more important. All sorts of valuable resources and opportunities would be devoted on these people.

Today, he was going to be the privilege prodigy of the school.

After leaving the combat testing room, Jiang Li heard a student cursing, "Fuck, why is the examination so hard this time? How could it be a martial arts master? I was dropped in one round and my test score dropped from a 0.9 to 0.89."

This was a very excellent student, an offspring of a wealthy family. His body was strong and he was fed many supplements. Originally, he had a chance to get a good grade in the exam but he fought the martial arts master in the final battle. Unluckily, he got demerits.

There were many people cursing saying that this martial arts master was too outrageous and was much different from the previous examinations.

Even the influential people of the school who had a life force of 0.9 or more had tense complexions after they came out as if their combat grades dropped their overall grades.

Jiang Li was calm at heart and face. He was reminiscing his fight with the martial arts master.

"principal, the examination grades are out."

Three hours later, the supervising teachers and students gathered together. All the test grades had come out. The year 12 student's grades were announced first.

"principal, there are 11 people in our school with a life force of 1. Of them, 10 were in year 12."

The teacher calculated the statistics with amazing speed.

"There are 11 students with life force of 1?" The principal confirmed hurriedly, "How was the student who got full marks in the literacy exam?"

"His life force is 1." Another teacher reported, "Full marks for the literacy exam! 4.8 seconds for 100m sprint, fist power is 1 tonne. As for his battle

with the martial arts master, he acquired merit points. His practical battle experience is excellent.”

“A surprising black horse has emerged.” A few teachers nodded, “His grades improved so much. He was only 0.7 for his last exam which was very average. But now, he is strong to this degree?”

“Who has the highest grades? Is it still Ou Yang Xing?” The principal knocked his fingers against the table as if in pensive thought.

“Yes, Ou Yang Xing’s life force is 1.1. He is far superior than most people. He has a 70% chance of getting into Astral University. Other than this, Lara Han, Deng Tianzhao, Wang Yunlong, Li Changtian, Xiao Hong, Liana Xue, Sarah Yun, Yelanie Lu and Jiang Li.”

“Okay, these 10 students are the focal point of our resources. Next term, make a training plan for them. We must get them up there. Our school can’t lose face again this year. There wasn’t a single student who got into Astral University last year. If it’s still the same this year, then I can only resign from being principal.” The principal laughed dryly, “What about the year 10 and year 11 students? Are there any outstanding ones? And didn’t you say there were 11 students with a life force of 1? Why did u only read out 10?”

“There’s another student who also got 1! But he isn’t year 12, his name is Jiang Tao and he is Jiang Li’s brother.” A teacher explained, “10 people with a life force of 1 in year 12, add Jiang Tao and there’s 11.”

“Oh so it’s Jiang Tao, he progressed this fast? He really is a genius.” The principal nodded as if expecting such news, “Jiang family has two sons. If

both of them could get into Astral University, that would be real astounding news."

"How many spots for centralized training this year?" a teacher asked, "Is it still 10?"

"No, increase the spots to 50 this year. Make the subsequent 40 students' families pay 100,000 star coins as enrollment fees. As for Jiang Tao, he is only year 11. University is still far for him but he has great potential. We need to pay him a lot of attention. Furthermore, for all genius students who received a life force of 1 this exam, give them 300 star coins of scholarship."

The principal started giving out orders and signing documents.

"Without a doubt, an email was sent to me."

Jiang Li only just walked out of the examination ground when his student chip beeped notifying him of the principal's email.

"Due to your excellent grades Jiang Li, the school has decided to allow you to participate in an enrichment class of 50 people. Starting from tomorrow, report to the enrichment class."

"Received."

Jiang Li replied

He was very excited, he could acquire more resources in the enrichment class. The school, government and the military would cooperate with each other to help the students in the enrichment class.

Ding Dong

"You have 300 star coins of scholarship transferred to your account."

Before, 300 star coins scholarship was already a lot. But now, he could earn 10,000 just by going to Xu Hua City for a walk. This really wasn't a big deal to him but every coin mattered.

"Jiang Li, congratulations on getting a good score and entering the enrichment class."

Outside the examination grounds, a girl walked up. It was Liana Xue. She was the centre of attention wherever she was.

"From now on, we're be in the same class, we can help each other out." Jiang Li smiled and replied. Ever since curing Xue Bear's spiritual condition, he and Liana became familiar.

"This year, the enrichment class was increased to 50 people. There are some of your enemies inside. Now you can go take your revenge." Liana looked at the distance.

"Zheng Wenbing! Zhang Yue! Yang Wu!" Jiang Li saw these three people immediately and smiled.

Their grades were still around 0.9. It was definitely not over 1.

Zheng Wenbing's heart felt stuffed when he saw Jiang Li and Liana conversing happily. His face grew dark and left hurriedly after talking briefly to Yang Wu and Zhang Yue.

"They should be in the same class with us, it'll be easy to take care of them." Jiang Li watched their backs as they left. He wasn't just going to beat them up, that was pointless.

He would make their families be on the verge of bankruptcy so that there would be no way for them to ever make it back.

These three thought that the wealthy were superior to normal people. Jiang Li wanted to make them taste what it was like to be poor.

Take it slow, he wasn't in a hurry. Jiang Li thought to himself.

He now occupied a definite advantage over them.

Because after the test grades came out and his life force was 1, the top ten of the school would be awarded by the Xing Hua City government. They would become influential and the government would give special attention and care to these seed students.

On top of that, he was going to become even stronger.

"Jiang Li, there's something you must remember. The first in our school Ou Yang Xing has a life force of 1.1. He is the strongest and he has a cruel heart. Try not to stumble into him if you can."

Liana and Jiang Li walked side by side and warned him. A car descended from the sky, she jumped on leaving a trail of dust behind her.

"I also need to earn money and buy a car." Jiang Li admired. He had the privilege to buy a car. The profile of a one star citizen wasn't just for show. It had a lot of privileges.

When Jiang Li got home, his dad was watching television while his mom cooked. When he saw Jiang Li come back, Jiang Li's dad didn't ask about his exam grades as if he knew that Jiang Li didn't do well as it was the case since he was small.

Just as he was about to give his parents a surprise, noise came from the door and he saw his brother Jiang Tao and sister Jiang Xuan walk in. There were many bandages on Jiang Xuan's leg and she seemed to be injured.

"What happened?" Jiang Li stood up.

"Little sister twisted her foot during the exam." Jiang Tao smiled, "I have already taken her to the doctors. It will recover after two days of rest." The sprains were small injuries and could easily be recovered.

"Big brother, I'm okay." Jiang Xuan's countenance was full of excitement, "My grades for this exam is 0.7. It is excellent in our class. Second brother

is even stronger, his life force is 1! The first in the entire year level. What's your grades like big brother?"

Jiang Xuan was still in junior high school. Her body hadn't finished developing so 0.7 was excellent. But if it was in senior high school, that would be average.

"Xuan Xuan, go to rest." The dad Jiang Zhendong scolded, "Be careful next time. Although these injuries are minor, they still costed Jiang Tao some money didn't it?"

"Dad it's fine, it's just 20-30 star coins. I received 300 star coins of scholarship this time." Jiang Tao signaled that he didn't care.

Then mum walked out of the kitchen, "A Tao, you're the first of your year level! We need to celebrate today."

"This is nothing much." Jiang Tao didn't look so excited as though that was the way it was supposed to be. There was great confidence in his voice, "By the way mum and dad, I have signed a contract with the military. I will be helping in the military and earning some money. I probably won't be back for the entire winter holidays."

"This is good, this is good....." His parents were very happy. Signing a contract with the military was a good thing. You could earn money while receiving great training.

He knew students with a life force of 1 like Jiang Tao were fought over by the military, police, big companies and government institutions. Many

companies would come over for a contract.

"A Li, you won't have much to do this winter holidays right." Jiang Zhendong knocked on the table, "I found a part time job for you. You should go earn some money and help support your brother."

"Dad, I have some things so I probably can't go." Jiang Li licked his lips.

"What things?" Jiang Zhendong was unhappy.

"It's okay, if A Li doesn't to work don't force him to. Just let him rest at home." mum came to ease down the situation, "Plus, how much can he earn now?"

"Okay... okay..." Jiang Zhendong was like a balloon deflating. He shook his head and drank some bitter tea.

"Things are like this." Jiang Li didn't bother hiding it anymore, "My life force reached 1 in this exam and I was selected to be in the enrichment class. In a few days, I will be receiving rewards and military training."

His tone was calm but it caused great amazement.

Pada!

Jiang Zhendong's tea cup fell to the floor. As if he didn't hear clearly, "What did you say?"

Chapter 34 - Mysterious Phone Call

"Dad, big brother said he was attending special training." Jiang Xuan said, "You can't underestimate big brother, last time he helped the police department crack a major case. He even gave me 3000 star coins pocket money."

"Wait...." Jiang Zhengdong didn't know how to react for a moment. Even mom was shocked. Little brother Jiang Tao looked at Jiang Li as if it was the first time knowing his brother, "A Li, what are your exam results this time?"

"Life force 1." Jiang Li replied honestly.

"What?" Jiang Zhongdong yelled out in excitement and scared everyone.

"This is my results and this is the principal's email." Jiang Li took out his student card and from it a hologram was projected. It couldn't be fake.

"You have a promising future...." Both mum and dad surrounded him looking at his results as if they were dreaming, "It really is 1, son how did you do it?"

"I just suddenly improved, and I can enter Deep Sleep whenever I want." Jiang Li said.

"You spiritual prowess improved." Mum and dad can to sudden realization, "No wonder you have improved so fast."

"Hahahah....." Jiang Zhengdong laughed happily, "Now, both of my sons have a promising future. Those people took my wealth but when my sons are strong, I will take it all back."

"Dad, what are you talking about?" Jiang Li's instincts told him that his dad had secrets because since he was small, he had never heard about his grandparents. According to the current life expectancies of humans, his grandparents would be alive even when Jiang Li himself became a dad.

"Nothing, I will tell you about it after you have entered into Astral University." Jiang Zhendong shook his hands, "Come, let's celebrate today. Buy a good bottle of wine."

"Mum, dad I'll go buy it." Jiang Tao said, "I couldn't believe big brother's spiritual cultivation had improved so fast. I'll go buy a bottle of Four Winged Tiger Bone Wine. Mum and dad you should both have some too!"

"Four Winged Tiger Bone Wine! That's around 1000 star coins a bottle. That is equivalent to a year's worth of our salary." Mum stared at Jiang Tao, "Where did you get all that money from?"

"I took on many jobs at my school," Jiang Tao said casually, "So I have some pocket money especially after receiving my scholarship. Mum and dad, you shouldn't spend any more money on me. You guys need to buy some supplements for your bodies. Oh and little sister needs cultivation

too.”

“Yes, I will work hard.” Jiang Xuan seemed to have been inspired.

“The wine is here....” In no time, Jiang Tao bought a bottle of wine online and had it delivered. The family sat around the table drinking and eating. Both parents were drunk and so was the little sister. Only the two brothers were wide awake and arranged for their parents’ rest before coming to the balcony to enjoy the wind.

“Big brother, you actually reached a life force of 1 in such a short time. Even I didn’t realise it. You really hit the mark on the first shot.” Little brother Jiang Tao said, “Mum and dad were very happy today and so was I. Big brother, with you supporting the family, there are somethings that I can finally do.”

“Little brother, you were very smart since a young age and seem to know some secrets about mum and dad. Who is our grandpa?” Jiang Li asked the doubt in his heart.

“I also don’t know.” Jiang Tao shook his head, “But I’ve heard that our Jiang family isn’t a small family but dad was kicked out from the family. That’s all that I know.”

“That’s my guess too.” Jiang Li said, “This seems to be a real problem for our dad. He seems distressed every time we bring it up. We need to find some time to investigate it and see which big families are called Jiang.”

“This can wait after we get into Astral University.” Jiang Tao shook his

head, "Humans have developed and are on many planets. There are many secrets that can't be investigated."

"Yea I guess that's the only way. Both of us need to get into Astral University."

The two brothers high fived each other.

Pia!

The sound of the high five reached out seeming vigorous and youthful in the snowy night.

Late at night, Jiang Tao rang a number. After tens of times of reallocations, he was finally put through. A stately voice sounded, "Jiang Tao, you have finally made up your mind?"

"General Wang, I have made up my mind. I can join your organization." Jiang Tao said with a heavy voice.

"Really?" The voice had a hint of surprising joy, "Jiang Tao, you are a genius. Without any resources and assistance, you actually went into the third stage of Deep Sleep and you are even close to entering Stasis. With your cultivation, you can definitely become a master that rules a region."

"I know this and I don't doubt your abilities at all." Jiang Tao's tone was very calm, "But, what I do has nothing to do with my family. If something happens to me, I want you to protect my family. That way, I'll provide my service to you."

"Jiang Tao, remember, you are not serving us, you are serving the future of our entire race, the recovery of our nation. The blood that runs in your veins is the ancient bloodline of the Chinese. You should sacrifice your blood and life for the recovery of our country." The voice said fiercely.

"Yes, the reason I called you was because I had this aspiration and wanted to enter the SSRO." Jiang Tao said calmly, "But I need some money."

"How much do you need?" The mysterious General Wang in the phone didn't have the slightest hesitation.

"1 million!" Jiang Tao said an astronomical sum, "1 million star coins, not for me but for my family. Give my family 100,000 star coins each year for ten years. I need to make sure that my family lives a good life and then I can join you guys."

"No problem, I will send a letter in the name of the military tomorrow saying that you have entered a special department of the military and then give your family 100,000 star coins of allowance." General Wang said, "And with our training and your prodigy, there won't be any problems at all for you to enter into Astral University! At that time, I will arrange for your migration into the elite district. Your whole family can benefit from that too."

"Okay!" Jiang Tao agreed.

The phone hung up and his expression was mature, "I am walking on a path of no return, the SSRO..... recovering my nations, my country is also

my desire. Although, the unity of humanity is prevalent, why can't our nation govern everything? Big brother, just protect mom and dad. You can support a family now and I can free myself to realize my desire. Use that money to train yourself."

A speechless night.....

After the exam, Jiang Li still didn't stay. He hid everyday to cultivate and learn hypnosis. He researched from information online and even spent money to register and buy from hypnosis websites, reading the works and theories of Tertiary Hypnotists.

Ever since cultivating the [Spiritual Emperor Seal], his thinking ability and understanding ability had increased many folds. He could understand all sorts of knowledge just by looking at it briefly.

Otherwise, he wouldn't get full marks in the literacy exam.

Meanwhile, Jiang Tao just went out saying he was participating in military training. The military also send out an invitation saying that the special training would finish in the next holidays.

Everyone in the family was working hard.

Three days later, Jiang Li came back to the school.

The school was already in holiday and was very quiet.

It was empty after the exam but for the 100 elites of the school, the cruel training had just begun.

They had to receive special training in the holidays.

When he just arrived at the school and hadn't even gone to his class, Jiang Li saw a hover car being driven into the school. It stopped out in the open. It was Lara.

"Jiang Li? Congratulations on your entry into the enrichment class." Lara parked her car and greeted Jiang Li, "I was surprised by your sudden burst in grades."

"Lara, you can buy a car?" Jiang Li was surprised. It wasn't because he thought Lara had monetary problems but only one star citizens could buy cars. Was Lara a one star citizen?

"I'm already a one star citizen, of course I can buy a car." Lara laughed, "A long time ago, I helped out in the military and accumulated enough service merits."

"Wow, you're good." Jiang Li gave out his thumb.

"You're better, I started accumulating merits since primary school and only just reached one star citizen. You did it in one case." Lara shook her hands.

"You know about what happened to me?" Jiang Li's eyes moved.

"You progressed to fast, anyone smart enough to notice would investigate you much less now. We're in a competition,ahaha." Lara smiled, "This special training is a preparation test for Astral University. Students with a life force of 1 are all my potential competitors. Astral University doesn't give out much places in our city."

"Haha, we'll see then." Jiang Li was happy.

"Lara, you're here?" Another hover car descended from the sky pulling out a long stream of gas in the sky. It parked in the open and a man walked out from inside. He wasn't driving his own car, the car belonged to his family.

Deng Tianzhao

Life force 1, and had entered Deep Sleep. He was strong himself and had resources to back him up. He was one of those people who were rich and talented at the same time. He had been a highly influential person of the school for a long time.

He was also a pursuer of Lara.

Now, as he came down from his family's hover car and saw Lara and Jiang Li together laughing and talking, his eyes immediately became cold.

"Uncle Zhi, you go back first."

"Yes, young master." The man drove the hover car back into the skies and disappeared with a swing of the tail.

Deng Tianzhao wasn't a one star citizen so he couldn't drive himself, he could only let someone from his family drive.

"Today is the day for the special training, why can't I be here?" Although Lara was smiling, her words brought an apathetic atmosphere to the place. It made people not dare to try to get close to her. It was nothing like the casual and joyful conversation she was just having with Jiang Li.

"Is it Jiang Li? You're grades skyrocketed this time. Congratulations, let's get to know each other." He walked in front of Jiang Li and extended his hands.

Jiang Li also reached out his hands and shook it with his.

Crack...crack...

Deng Tianzhao's face changed, his bones inside were aching. He felt that Jiang Li's hands were like massive pliers grinding on his bones.

They both had a life force of 1 but he was no match for Jiang Li.

At this rate, he would end up looking bad.

Good thing was that Jiang Li let go and didn't want to cause too much trouble.

“Schoolmate Deng, we’re evenly matched. You’re really strong, we really should get closer.” After he released his hands, he made sure that Deng Tianzhao would not be humiliated.

He was training crazily recently. With adequate nutrition and contemplation of the brain of the universe, normal strong people were no match for him.

Chapter 35 - Protective Amulet

"This person's life force is 1, the same as me, why is his body so strong? Did he eat some super supplements? No way, I ate all sorts of super supplements since I was young. He is only a poor student, what good supplements can he get?" Deng Tianzhao was unhappy but there was nothing he could do. Jiang Li's body was too strong.

What he didn't know was that Jiang Li cultivated the [Spiritual Emperor Seal] making his body stronger than normal people.

He was still doubtful but he knew Jiang Li wasn't serious and didn't humiliate him so he nodded his head and walked away hurriedly to greet other people so he could save himself from the awkwardness.

Lara saw this and was also surprised. Theoretically, Jiang Li and Deng Tianzhao should be on par but now it was quite obvious, Deng Tianzhao was outmatched.

"Lara, you're also here?"

Another hover car descended from the sky to three metres above the ground when a girl jumped down silently. It was Liana Xue.

Liana scanned and had a smile on her face, "Lara, how was your cultivation recently? We're now classmates. It's the last semester now, let's see who can get into Astral University?"

“Okay!” Lara raised her head to take up the challenge, “I will have many opportunities to spar with you in the final semester since we’re in the same class.”

The two girls talked against each other. Neither of them were convinced of the other.

The students out in the open gradually built up. There were 50 students for this enrichment class, each of them were the elite. The weakest ones had a life force of greater than 0.9. Most of the students were dropped off by cars. The sky was littered with hover cars ascending and descending, all sorts of famous brands flashed into people’s eyes.

The family with the least wealth was probably Jiang Li’s.

Wuwuwuw... another huge hover car descended. Males and females walked out. Now, 9 out of the 10 influential people of the school had arrived.

Wang Yunlong, Li Changtian, Xiao Hong, Liana Xue, Sarah Yun, Yelanie Lu, Jiang Li, Deng Tianzhao, Lara Luo.

Jiang Tao was a year 11 student. Although his life force was also 1, this was a training class for year 12’s so he had to wait another semester before coming. However, the school treated him as a seed and would give him other cultivation opportunities. But, he went to the military himself and after a semester, he would definitely earn a lot of money.

Out of the 9 students masters, Jiang Li was the most prominent one. Other than him, there was also another person who also didn't drive a car. He was a normal civilian, Xiao Hong.

This student's body was that high but his eyes were like lightning and gave people a sense of lonely arrogance. He didn't fit the crowd and usually didn't talk. He always closed his eyes and meditated as if there was nothing that could arouse his interest other than cultivation and even pretty girls couldn't.

He was a legendary figure in the school. He was born into a normal civilian family but displayed his talent at a very young age. His spiritual cultivation went into Deep Sleep and was working outside. According to some people, he had already signed a contract with a large company to become their CEO. The salary was very good.

"These students aren't normal people." Jiang Li thought.

In no time, there was more and more people out in the open.

The other 0.9 students gathered amongst themselves and didn't mix with the 9 masters. This surreptitiously outlined the difference due to strength.

The strong people with a life force of 1 stood high in condescension towards the other students. No matter how strong the other students were, they were only like leaves to a flower. The fact was so as well, as person with a life force of 1 could beat 4 to 5 0.9 life force people combined. There was a huge difference in power.

Originally, Jiang Li didn't have the right to be on par with these people but now, he jumped straight above their heads making many of them uncomfortable.

"We have all arrived except for Ou Yang Xing." Wang Yunlong folded his arms and sneered at Deng Tianzhao who was beside him, "Just because he is the first in the school?"

"There's nothing we can do, his life force is 1.1. He is a level above all of us." There was great jealousy in Deng Tianzhao's eyes.

Wuwuwuwu.....

Vibrational sound of the air came from the skies.

A flying vehicle twice as large as a normal car arrived in the sky and descended slowly. A youth walked out from it. This youth was around 18 years old and had a height of 1.9m. He wore tightly fit black clothes and walked down with a condescending temperament. His eyes scanned with sharpness as if a leader inspecting his soldiers.

"That's Ou Yang Xing, he's here!"

"He is the first in the school. I had that the school says he has a 90% chance of getting into Astral University."

"There are many people in the Ou Yang family involved in politics, business and monopolized the major businesses in many cities. Being a high ranking officer was just average in their family. Ou Yang Xing

definitely wants to get into Astral University and then migrate to the elite district to become the strong elite of humanity to fight in the cosmos!"

"His temperament is very strong, people say he has reached the third stage of Deep Sleep, wonder if this is true.".....

Huala.... Ou Yang Xing appearing causing a mass rupture.

"This is Ou Yang Xing? No doubt he is stronger than all of us." Jiang Li was shocked on the inside. The first in the school with everyone's eyes set on him. His temperament was strong as if he experienced countless battles. The blade like spirit washed away all of his impurities, "If I am matched against him I really might not be able to defeat him. I must be careful."

After Ou Yang Xing walked down, he swiped his hand and the hover vehicle flew away automatically.

This was a student of a large family.

The first of 800,000 students. Even the teachers, instructors were no match for him.

He was a major figure with a life force of 1.1.

"He's really cocky." A few people with a life force of 1 weren't convinced of him.

"The principle is here." It was unknown who said that but the crowd suddenly became quiet.

In the distance, the principle appeared on the podium but he was only a side figure. The real protagonist of today was someone from the military. He had a bulky figure and neatly worn military clothing. His eyes were bright and people didn't dare to look into them.

Other than him, there was another government personnel standing beside this army man.

Jiang Li saw on TV, that government personnel was in actual fact the mayor of Xing Hua City!

The mayor of Xing Hua City had great authority and could control everything. Usually, he didn't appear so easily but this time was special. It was the award for the high achieving students of the school so he had to come. Every year, if someone from Xing Hua City went into Astral University, that would go on his political record. This was highly important for any city.

"Students, I'm your mayor!"

As soon as the mayor appeared, he talked in a very amicable tone, "You are the elite of the entire school, the first 50 out of 800,000 students. When you walk out into the society, you will be the strong people of humanity. But you must not be arrogant because of this. What you need to do is become the elite of humanity and enter into Astral University. This time, the government will award you for your outstanding grades. Now, could the following students please come to the stage to receive

their rewards. Ou Yang Xing, Wang Yunlong, Li Changtian, Xiao Hong, Liana Xue, Sarah Yun, Yelanie Lu, Jiang Li, Deng Tianzhao, and Lara Luo!"

The ten students heard the mayor and walked onto the stage.

At that moment, a large group of journalists and news channels were broadcasting live.

This was a significant event each year.

Many major entrepreneurs wanted to see the mayor but were unable. Now, Jiang Li was shaking hands with this major figure of Xing Hua City. He was encouraging him amicably and this made Jiang Li feel like he was dreaming.

"Jiang Li, I hope you may continue your hard work and get into Astral University and contribute to humanity for Xing Hua City." The mayor shook their hands respectively and when it was Jiang Li, his smile was very natural. It definitely wasn't pretentious, "If there are any troubles in your family, you may report it to the government and we'll do our best to help you!"

Jiang Li was very satisfied upon hearing these words, "Thank you mayor, I will definitely do my best!"

He knew the mayor was being sincere as the elite of each year could receive great support from the government.

When he shook hands with the mayor, the mayor gave him a Feng Yun

badge and 3000 star coins scholarship personally.

The Feng Yun badge was a special type of honour.

Below the stage, Zheng Wenbing, Yang Wu and Zhang Yue looked on as Jiang Li received the badge. Their faces grew very gloomy and all knew that it would be much harder for them for to enact any of their plans from now on.

These students were already noticed by the government and were top priority for training. This was equivalent to earning a protective talisman.

The mayor finished greeting these people and began to talk once again, "Students, this time, the government will be collaborating with the military to provide special training for you. We hope that you may grow more in this training. This is the first instructor of Xing Hua City, General Song. Now, he will arrange this military training for you."

At this moment, the General Song took large steps forward giving people a sense of a ferocious beast treading on the ground.

"Students, you are all strong. Your quality is much greater than normal soldiers but your targets are also much greater. It is get into Astral University so my army will arrange training for you. It will be very cruel. You may choose to leave if you do not wish to participate." When he talked, his voice wasn't loud but it reached clearly into everyone's ears.

Jiang Li listened and knew that this instructor's abilities weren't below that of Illusory Fox's but he probably wasn't a hypnotist.

If he was a hypnotist, his influence would be much greater than this.

But his abilities were definitely worthy of the title, the first instructor of the Xing Hua City military district.

Only these type of people could subdue some cocky and rapturous students.

"We'll stand firmly!"

"Everything for humanity!"

The 100 people below said in unison. Every student had received rigorous military training and acted like a soldier.

"Okay then, from now on, your training has begun. Everyone, run forward into the equipment room of the school and find your numbered metal armor. They are made to match your size. After you wear them, come and gather here!" The first instructor declared loudly!

"Yes! We obey the order!" All the students even including the 1st amongst the students, Ou Yang Xing, yelled loudly. This was military training, he couldn't act cool and use his temper.

No family could compare to the military.

Jiang Li also followed the students and ran into the equipment room.

He took out his student chip and swiped opening a locker belong to him. Immediately, he saw there were many metal armour parts, helmet, chest plate, gauntlet, boots, knee protection....

He wore it immediately and as soon as he put it on, he felt like he was a robot. This set of armour weighed approximately 100 kg. It pressed onto him making it inconvenient for him to maneuver.

Fortunately, their physical capabilities were very strong. Wearing the metal armour was equivalent to training their bodies from every angle by bearing weight.

Chapter 36 - Train to Kill?

"Pity this is full metal armour not mechanical armour." Jiang Li sighed. Mechanical armour was the one he saw during Illusory Fox's apprehension. It was fitted with a mobility system and could fly and glide. People who wore it had immense strength and agility, resulting in an immense increase in battle power.

These metal armours looked just like the mechanical armours, however, they were immobile and were just models. They were like cars without a motor.

When this group of students wore the armours, the first instructor was conversing with the principle on the stadium. The mayor had left already.

"General Song, how good is the quality of this batch of students today?" The principal asked.

"Good, very high." General Song nodded, "Especially that last ten. If they come into the army and receive training, they would definitely be worthy of the rank senior colonel. I've already cultivated for forty years and so I can't compare with them. But if they want to enter Astral University, they must have a final rush. To be honest, the prerequisite for Astral University is crazy. If I go for the test now, my physical capabilities may pass but my literacy will definitely fail. We only need that 10 people for this special training. The others only act as fillers."

General Song's physical capabilities, and martial arts were all very

strong. Unfortunately, there was no place for him in Astral University.

First, after he entered the military, he focused purely on martial arts so his literacy exam will not suffice. Second, the age restriction for Astral University is 20. Those who were over age were unable to apply.

Because the older they were, the less malleable they were.

"We also need to give them a chance. What if they suddenly do well. They have huge potential." The principle quickly defended, "This time, those parents of those students with 0.9 life force have contributed quite some money. It's definitely the school that pays for the fees for this collaboration."

"I know of this. 0.9 is already very outstanding and will qualify for a normal instructor. I did not say they were inept," General Song said, "I have already arranged for a hellish training to excavate their potential. It all depends on whether or not they can endure through it."

A super large military hover vehicle stopped amongst the valley of mountains.

The mountains formed a path towards the distance.

Huge trees covered the skies, and some trees were even as high as 100 meters. It was just like a virgin forest. Roars of huge beasts could be heard echoing within the ranges.

Outside the mountain ranges, tens of meters of electrical fence rose up

saying “military zone, bypasses prohibited”.

When humanity united, people started curing the environment. After 200 years of treatment, there were virgin forests everywhere.

When humans acquired the technology to traverse in wormholes, all sorts of biotechnology was developed significantly. All they had to do was take out a bit of plantation growth liquid and immediately, all types of plantations would grow like crazy.

Now, the living environment on Earth was very good. The face of the Earth also changed quite a lot.

“From now on, you will be undergoing cruel battle training in the wild!”

100 people came out from the car all wearing armours. When they reached inside the valley, General Song looked at everyone, “This is our military base. It models the harsh battle fields of foreign planets. During one of your exams for Astral University, the government will use a large transporter to transport you to outer space for real life battle examination. Only after you complete it will you truly become a student of Astral University.”

Everyone listened quietly.

“To tell you the truth, the exam for Astral University gets harsher and harsher by each year. 30 years ago, I was also one of the candidates and was sent to the battle field of outer space. I almost lost my life and I failed the exam!” General Song said, “Every single one of Astral

University's student is a warrior that stood the test of battles. If you want to become their student, I can say you are far from adequate! Ou Yang Xing!"

"Here!"

Ou Yang Xing stood out.

"You are the strongest in the school, your life force has reached 1.1 is that so?"

"Yes!"

Peng!

General Song's fists struck hard on Ou Yang Xing's body making a ear shattering vibration with the metal armour but Ou Yang Xing only rocked a bit and didn't even take a step back.

"Not bad!" General Song applauded, "But according to our analysis, your chances of getting into Astral University still isn't 100%. You may even lose your life in the final battle exam! This time is your best opportunity for real life battle practice! Inside this prohibited military zone are countless extraterrestrial life forms, and ferocious beasts. You will be attacked and there may even be casualties if you go in there. It's still not too late to quit."

"We will stay till the end!"

These 100 students were the elite selected from 800,000 students. This was a rare training drill inside a prohibited military zone, there was no way they would pass out on this.

Even if their family was wealthy, they couldn't have this training opportunity. At most, they could practice in virtual reality.

But virtual reality is virtual, how could it compare with real life battles?

This type of real training was really beneficial for the growth of the spirit.

"You have adequate food and water. Go in the forest. The duration of this exercise will be ten days! The armour on your body will protect you from harm. These extraterrestrial life forms are very dangerous and cannot be stopped just by flesh and blood. Of course, you may take it off if you have the guts!"

General Song said: "There are also benefits for you to train inside. Deep inside this forest, there are many aliens of high value. You may take their valuable parts after you kill them. This is all your own fortune."

"Oh...."

"Woah...."

The students started discussing amongst themselves.

"Pfft, so what, this all came from our money." The last fifty students were contempt.

Their families had to pay a lot of money for them to be allowed in this enrichment class. The school and the military was in collaboration this time so the school gave the military a large sum of money to train the students. So they were spending their own money. No matter how many alien life forms they killed, it was still pointless.

Only Jiang Li nodded his head slightly, he thought that was the reward given to them.

"Ten days later, you must meet up at the other entrance of the military base!" General Song took out a map, "That entrance is approximately 300 km from here linearly.!"

"Linearly?"

The crowd was shocked. This mountain range twisted and turned. What appeared to be just in front of you may take a day and a night to reach. The linear distance was 300km but the actual distance was probably more than 1000km.

"Last point!"

General Song's face was bleak, "In this military base, there is another type of special life form. They are extraterrestrial warriors. This time, the main purpose of this exercise is to kill them. The first place belongs to

whoever kills them the most! The reward will be 100,000 star coins worth of military medications.”

“What? Kill?”

“They want us to kill!”.....

A lot of students were shocked. They didn’t think that this exercise was so cruel.

According to current records, Earthly humans had used wormhole travel and discovered up to hundreds of planets with life. Other than encountering all sorts of alien life, there were also other planets with human life.

For example, the [Great Dream Heart Sutra] Jiang Li acquired came from a very strong cultivation planet.

There was no technology on this planet and people couldn’t travel through space. However, the resources in that place were very rich. There were many master cultivators. Even with the advantage of technology, humans still hadn’t been able to conquer it.

Of course, humans were in a position that can’t be defeated.

Because humans could traverse the vast universe while although the warriors of that planet could flip rivers and overturn seas, they couldn’t undertake interstellar travel.

However, alien humans were also humans. Today, the cruel training exercise was actually killing humans!

Many students' hearts pulsated rapidly.

In the modern society, it was almost impossible to kill people, even the wealthy people couldn't. The right to life had been written into the highest law. Although there were still many dark aspects of society, no students who received proper education was a bloodthirsty demon.

Jiang Li never killed people and didn't want to kill people.

"What? You're afraid?" General Song's eyes were very sharp. His cold eyes glanced at everyone and immediately, people felt a surge of coldness invade into their heart.

General Song definitely killed people.

"Everything for humanity, they aren't earthly humans, they are our enemies, The universe is cold, humans need to advance constantly, we need to conquer and invade!" He looked at this group of people, his contemptuous countenance obvious, "Why do we Earthly humans live such a wonderful life? Because it was fought by the elite of the human race! Every prosperity comes with blood and fire. Take back your mercy! There is no mercy in the universe!"

Everyone knew of this

Jiang Li knew that in the entire universe, there was indeed no mercy. Before, countries on Earth had cruel battles between them for survival and benefits. They had to slaughter.

"If there is anyone who is unwilling, you can leave now!" General Song said.

"We will definitely stay!"

Still, no-one left.

"In that case, let's begin! It's 12pm right now, ten days later, you must appear at the other exit! At this time as well!"

With the order of General Song, this training exercise officially began.

Sou!

A silhouette flew into the forest and left in an instant.

It was the first of the school, Ou Yang Xing!

He was well above everyone else and didn't want to bring himself down to team up with the others.

"Jiang Li, let's go in as well." Lara moved closer to Jiang Li, "This military prohibited area is extremely dangerous, we can help each other."

"Jiang Li, come make a team with me." Liana's voice was loud and caused some attention. Immediately, Jiang Li was the target of jealousy. He felt many fiery eyes staring at him as if it was going to burn him.

Lara and Liana were the two goddesses of the school. Normally, guys would be flattered to even talk to one of them for a small while. Now, the two goddesses want to make a team with Jiang Li?

Training together in a team was a good way to increase in intimacy.

"Let's all go together. This exercise is going to be very hard, we can use it to compete with each other. I'll be the judge to see which of you is stronger, how about it?" Jiang Li thought slightly and knew it was a hard situation to deal with. Rejecting any of the goddess would make them greatly lose face and create trouble.

"Okay." Liana's eyes glittered, she had long wanted to compare with Lara, "Lara do you dare to compete with me and see who is stronger?"

"No problem!" Liana was very casual, "Jiang Li, you be the judge. Let's go."

"Go!"

As if in tacit agreement, the three rushed outwards.

Chapter 37 - Tit for Tat

Many silhouettes were jumping around in the forest. Even with 100 kgs of armour, the students were still agile like monkeys. This was a representation of their strong life force.

Originally, those brushes and pricks were very annoying when travelling through the forest. People had to cut them before entering. But now with this whole suit of armour, things were much easier. They charged through many of the thorned bushes.

The metal armour also had a thin waterproof layer so even small insects like ants and centipede couldn't crawl inside.

In these forests, the most fearsome things weren't the beasts but the small insects. They could go into literally any hole. Once people were bitten, they would feel itchiness and pain at the same time. Sometimes, it could even be lethal.

The only downside was that it was slightly heavy, especially walking in it through the mountains. It consumed tens of times more stamina than normal humans had. Only strong people could run with it.

The fifty or so students gathered into small groups of 3 or 5, some of them went alone into the depths of the forests. It was like a handful of sand sprinkled into the ocean, they disappeared immediately.

Zheng Wenbing, Yang Wu and Zhang Yue also followed behind

surreptitiously. They were biting their teeth due to their hatred for Jiang Li but they didn't dare to take any action. It was quite obvious that Jiang Li was liked by the two girls Liana and Lara. It was suicide to go against the two girls.

"I wonder what luck Jiang Li the animal got that caused his power to increase so rapidly."

Zheng Wenbing tried to steal the chicken but instead lost a handful of rice and compensated 300,000 star coins. He was discontent, he wanted revenge.

"How do we get revenge? We can't do it the proper way, Liana and Lara are protecting him." Yang Wu had recovered but his face still kinda hurt. He was slapped in the face by Jiang Li, whenever he thought about it he had a crazy sense of humiliation.

"Let's see, perhaps we can start a conflict between Ou Yang Xing and Jiang Li. As long as Ou Yang Xing takes action, Jiang Li will suffer heavy losses."

Zhang Yue was very bleak.

"Yes, if the two go against each other, that would look good...."

"Should we contact Ou Yang Xing?"

"We can do that, we must start shit between these two."

The three went into the forest sheepishly.

A snow white long blade appeared in Liana's hands. She waved it and some snowflakes fell. D rank sword art [Snow Covering The Apex]. All her surroundings were covered by the long sword.

Many bushes were sliced in half by her long sword and a long steady pathway appeared.

This blade was the weapon she brought with her at all times.

This exercise only permitted the bringing of cold weapons.

Of course, civilians were prohibited to use hot weaponry anyway. The wealthy could get their hands on it but they could only use it secretly. Cold weapons weren't restricted.

Liana's weapon was her favourite weapon. It was 1.3 meters long, the blade was narrow and the sword itself was forged with super tensile alloy. It could really slice metal like clay.

It had the shape of samurai swords but narrower. There was a crease through the middle of the blade for directing blood.

This blade was like a dancing butterfly in the hands of Liana. She was very proficient at it.

Sho!

A strange snake suddenly attacked from the brush, it spewed venom onto the armour and that armour suddenly emitted a white smoke. It had the signs of corrosion. If there was no armour, the whole body would have been corroded into a pile of meat.

The blade light swung and the snake's head was sliced off. Liana used another move [Carrying lamp while watching sword] to slice the snake's entire body open. A snake bladder was taken out by the blade.

"Jiang Li, take it. This is a Qu Po snake from another planet. Its bladder sells for tens of star coins."

Although Liana killed the snake and acquired the snake bladder, she didn't need it herself. She didn't find something worth tens of star coins useful.

However, Jiang Li took it carefully and put it into a bag. He didn't have any hesitations. Tens of star coins was also money. It was equivalent to half a month of his parents' salary. A mosquito may be small but it was still meat.

"Lara, this is the first alien life form I have killed. When the human army first arrived at planet Qu Po, these types of snakes have caused quite some casualties to our army."

Liana said in a satisfied way. She felt her sword art, agility and spirit had all increased exponentially.

"If you weren't wearing your metal armour, your body would have fully corroded by now." Lara said coldly, "Plus, look at the snake's head."

Liana heart thudded.

The cut off head had a needle on top of it pinning it to the ground. It penetrated through the snake's brain.

It was obvious that Lara threw the needle.

Nobody knew when she threw out the iron needle.

The Qu Po snake's venom was very potent, it was highly corrosive. Those who were spewed by it would be corroded till they didn't even have bones left. A hundred years ago when the human army first descended on planet Qu Po, large amounts of snakes spewed venom and caused quite some casualties to the human army. Some weaker armours were even corroded.

Lara actually knew how to use needles.

"This time, you're even." Jiang Li saw the two girls having a discord, "I saw clearly that when Lara's needle shot out, Liana's sword also cut the skin. You're both very alert."

"Whatever, a small Qu Po snake doesn't go in my eyes. Lara, you play with needles like a hysteric transsexual called Dongfang Bubai from a novel a long time ago."

Liana laughed.

"It's not only Dongfang Bubai who plays with needles, so does the monkey king." Lara smiled mildly. The needles disappeared and appeared from the tip of her fingers like spirit snakes.

"Hmph!" Liana said immediately, "Lara, if you're so good then let's have a competition, take off your armour and go throw the bush, how about it? You will get true benefit by constantly being under danger, are you brave enough?"

"Of course I am." Lara started taking off the armour on her body.

"No, you two, don't put your life on the line over an argument!" Jiang Li was frightened. In this dangerous forest, taking off the armour was like suicide. Taking the example from before, the pretty girl would have corroded bones if the venom reached her body without the protection of the armour.

Taking off the armour was like rolling on the blade of a knife. Who knows what dangers there will be deep in the forest?

Seeing that Lara took off her armour, Liana also took off her armour showing her tight clothes that outlined her curvaceous body. She was around 1.8m, a tall pretty lady indeed.

Lara's body was also not bad. Both of them wore tight clothes of high quality. Who knows what material they were made of. An aromatic smell

wafted through the air making people think into the sexual side of things.

"You two, please don't argue like this, this bush is very dangerous. If an accident occurs, you wouldn't be saved even with the modern medical technology." Jiang Li tried to persuade them but the two girls wouldn't listen.

"Only this way can we focus our spirits and be alert of danger at all times so we can train our spiritual sense. Deep in the grass, there were 3 venomous spiders, 4 scorpions and 2 centipedes...." Lara's ears suddenly twitched and accurately captured many of their locations. Her hand swooshed.

Shua shua shua.....

9 thin like cow hair needles flew out. There was a rustle in the depth of the bush. Some venomous life forms were accurately killed.

"Jiang Li, help us carry the armour!" Liana had a very glamorous smile, "We still need it when we rest at night."

"Carry your armour? I need to carry both of your armours?" Jiang Li was stunned, a set of armour was 100kg, plus their two would mean that he had to carry 300kg on his back. That was huge torture.

"You need to be a gentlemen. Helping ladies carry things is nothing." Liana was purposely playing with Jiang Li.

"Yea, you're only a good man if you help us carry things." He didn't know why, but the rivals Liana and Lara were working together to make

fun of Jiang Li.

“Never mind, I’ll just be a laborer for once. I’ll just pretend it is training. You two walk slower.” He squatted and folded the pieces of armour into two large boxes eventually. He carried one in each hand and followed behind the two girls. He walked very fast and didn’t fall behind.

Originally, Liana and Lara took off the weight and could run very fast. There was no way Jiang Li could catch up to them. However, taking off the armour also meant danger, they had to walk each bit of their path very carefully. Their spirit was concentrated and spread out into a few hundred meter radius around them so their walking speed was not that fast.

Meanwhile Jiang Li was heedless and rammed straight forward even if there were venomous insects. He stomped large amounts of them.

“The venomous wasp is here!”

Just when they flipped over a few hilltops, a buzzing sound came from in front of them.

Immediately, Lara and Liana’s face changed. They saw a huge swarm of venomous wasp form into a bundle. Each of them were finger length long and the size of a thumb. They were a type of extraterrestrial wasp and were very aggressive.

Shooo.....

They sensed the ki of humans and the whole swarm suddenly flew towards them ferociously.

Lara was like a bow, she sprung up and waved her hand. Immediately, a large pack of needles flew out clashing into the wasps that flew over. Immediately, the wasps rained down like rain drops.

“Kill!” Liana sprung up as the sword in her hand made an arc. Her forearm shook and swung up to hundreds of times. The blade rung as each blade cut accurately into a wasp.

No wasps could reach within a sword’s length of her body.

C Rank sword art [Heavy Rain Cut].

This was an ancient type of sword art evolved from Japanese and Chinese sword art. It had a high degree of accuracy and speed requiring a lot from the muscles. Some masters trained in sealed environments slicing flies. In one second, they could slice more than 10 flies, with each one of them sliced exactly in half.

But Liana’s speed was faster. She swung out twenty times a second without being short of breath. She could do it consecutively.

Jiang Li could only see the flickering of the blade as Liana surrounded herself with blade swings. The wasps all fell and ten seconds later, this swarm of venomous wasps were cleanly destroyed.

But, Liana’s face had a huge swelling. It was very scary. Obviously, she

had missed a wasp. Her beautiful face was destroyed.

But she was well prepared and immediately took a small bottle, spraying the contents onto her face. The swelling disappeared immediately and her skin was smooth as silk. This was the newest skin recovery spray. It was very expensive. A small bottle like that costed thousands of star coins and was hard find on the market.

Chapter 38 - Dream to Power

"Liana, your face was almost ruined." Lara started laughing, "Looks like your [Heavy Rain Cut] isn't proficient enough. I remember there were martial artists who used [Heavy Rain Cut] to defend himself in the thunderstorm. When the thunderstorm ended, there was not a single bit of rain drop on him but you were bitten by a bunch of venomous wasp on the face."

"Heng!" Liana found a place to sit and didn't talk. She was deep breathing and resting as if she learned quite a lot from killing the wasps: "What do you know? I finally found the weakness in my sword art just then and that caused me to lose concentration which was why i missed a wasp. Without experience, you can never understand how precious that bite was. The moment that the wasp bite me, I gained understanding."

"I learned of my weakness ages ago!" Lara's tone was cold.

The two girls were going toe to toe.

Jiang Li didn't talk as he didn't want to burn himself. The two girls in competition were too scary. All he needed to do was be the laborer and quietly carry the armours at the back.

This was a tiring job but it was huge training for his stamina.

The two girls rested for a bit and rose up once again towards the depths of the forest. Jiang Li followed them and at this moment, Lara

suddenly swooped out her sword tied to her waist. Frosty light glowed showcasing the sharpness of the blade.

Any ancient sharp weapons stood no chance against the weapons forged by modern technology.

The two girls' speed were increasing and Jiang Li found it a bit difficult at the back. But he secretly, used the [Spiritual Emperor Seal] and some contemplation and began to recover his stamina as he ran.

He was puffing heavily and reached his limit many times.

Wearing 100kg armor and carrying 200kg of metal armor was indeed very hard when he had to follow the two girls closely.

There was fire and sparks coming out of the girls' rivalry and they began to go faster and faster.

Jiang Li's stamina gradually couldn't keep up anymore.

"Women are really scary when they act crazy." He secretly shook his head but didn't want to stop and rest. This was very good training for him and he didn't want to pass out on it.

Breathe...Breathe.....

Suddenly, his awareness began to get fuzzy and his whole body entered into a dream. He actually went into Deep Sleep when he was running. It

was just like he was dream walking.

Going into Deep Sleep during exercise?

This was a very high state. The third state.

Even masters who could go into Deep Sleep had to sit up and stop exercise, calm his mind, breath and keep his body in balance before he entered Deep Sleep.

As soon as there was the slightest movement outside, the master would spring up and the state of Deep Sleep would be removed.

As long as the body exercised, that spiritual state would be gone. This was inevitable.

Only those whose spiritual cultivation was about to break through could enter Deep Sleep so easily.

When he was running, he carried too much and his body finally reached his limit. In order to recover stamina, he started contemplating [Spiritual Emperor Seal] and all its hand seals. His body didn't move but his spirit formed the seals.

The flickering of his spirit in contemplation made his body and brain be under a peculiar spiritual state.

Dreaming for many millenniums, what era is it now?

His spirit entered into Deep Sleep and his whole view became very special.

His body was sprinting but his spirit was asleep. But his sleeping spirit could see everything outside but it was just that everything outside was very fuzzy.

He felt that in his dream he wasn't tired at all and his spirit received the perfect rest. His spirit started to change his body through nerves, blood vessels and internal secretion. This was training in the limits, dream cultivation.

It was just like the ancient [Drunken Fist].

When people were drunk, their fist power was many times stronger than normal because their spirit was in a state of excitement. It was like being injected with adrenalin.

Spirit is drunk but not the will, footstep is drunk but not the heart.

Now, Jiang Li's spirit was in Deep Sleep, he was sleepwalking and his body was sprinting. This was that state.

He followed behind the two girls closely and didn't fall behind a single bit not matter how the girls ran.

"How is his stamina so good?"

Lara and Liana were surprised. They all had a life force of one but Jiang Li seemed many times stronger than them: "Did he use adrenalin? Now, using adrenalin is only a short term burst in power, it can't last this long or the body will collapse."

"No! He's about to break through, his spiritual state is about to breakthrough! He entered the third stage of Deep Sleep!"

Lara suddenly said, "He entered Deep Sleep while exercising, body sleeps but heart doesn't sleep, spirit sleeps but will doesn't sleep! This is the highest stage of Deep Sleep."

"My god, his spiritual state can break through so easily?"

Deep Sleep was a spiritual state dividing into three stages.

First stage, it took a long time of meditation, deep breathing before you could enter into Deep Sleep.

The second stage was when you could enter whenever you wanted.

The final stage is to enter it during exercise.

This was also the mental state described by the ancient art of [Drunken Fist].

Boundless strength, knowing no fatigue, ferocious fist power, long

stamina and impervious technique.

Now, Lara and Liana was only at the second stage and could enter Deep Sleep whenever they liked. But as soon as they moved, their spiritual state would be broken.

Even so, they were great prodigies.

Roar!!

As they were running into a valley, a huge roar sounded from in front of them. A mad beast blocked the entrance to the valley. This beast was the size of a rhinoceros but he had scales that were tough like metal welded onto his body.

"Metal Armour Beast!"

Both Lara and Liana were shocked. The real astral beast had appeared.

Metal Armour Beast! The scales on its body were harder than iron but it's stamina was still very strong and the same could be said about his agility. When it jumped, the scales opened outward allowing it to even glide a short distance through the air.

It's fastest speed was 30m per second!

It could even ram over a flying car.

When it saw humans appear, its eyes became bloodshot as it raised its hooves and charged over towards the three.

"Dodge! Dodge it quickly!" Lara and Liana both yelled and stepped sideways but Jiang Li was still running and sprinting towards the front.

"Oh no!" The two girls were in deep regret, they knew that after this, Jiang Li would probably pulverised.

Hong Long!

The sprinting Jiang Li wearing full armour rammed into the real Metal Armour Beast full on.

It was like two flying trucks ramming each other. The huge impact it created could obliterate all flesh and bones. But the next moment, Jiang Li actually didn't get rammed flying by the Metal Armour Beast.

He stopped the charge of the Metal Armour Beast!

The charge was stopped by his hands pressing against its head. Jiang Li's body was sliding backwards as countless stones were crushed under his foot.

Pang!

He suddenly twisted and smashed the two metal cases onto the beast and sent him crashing into the ground.

The beast's head made cracking sounds as it convulsed. Eventually, it became silent.

It was straight up smashed to death.

This was raw violence. Jiang Li's barbaric force deeply shocked Liana and Lara. Right now, they felt that Jiang Li was a humanoid transformer.

"Jiang Li, how did you do that?"

Beside the river inside the valley, Jiang Li used a blade to cut open the beast's head and take out a metal like heavy ball. This was a precious mine stone, it was worth hundreds of star coins.

These types of metals were created inside the Metal Armour Beast's head and could be used to make weapons and forge armours and even battleships. It was a special type of metal.

The most precious component of the beast was this.

Jiang Li was puffing and woke up from his 'dream'. His blurred vision disappeared and his whole body was squelching with pain. He was completely exhausted.

It was like someone who had used adrenalin after its effects had disappeared.

His power was almost twice his normal strength when he was in that state. He went berserk and unbelievably smashed the Metal Armour Beast to death while wearing 600kg of metal armour.

"Rest up, this is a stamina replenishing nutritional serum." Lara passed over a tube of serum. Jiang Li opened up his armor and was so tired that he could barely move. He tried his best to grab the serum and drink it. A pulse of coolness spread through his body as every cell rejoiced.

After ten minutes of so, his pain was greatly reduced: "What is this nutritional serum, it's effects are so good?"

"This is Snow Essence." Liana used water to wash her long sword clean, "Each tube is 3000 star coins and can increase the activity of cells, ease muscle fatigue and clear the body of poisons. It definitely has no side effects and with one tube, a person can have enough nutrition for three days. This serum would mix with the stomach acid and increase people's digestive abilities. It is a grade better than the Green God Nutritional Serum."

"Didn't think you knew it so well." Lara smiled, "You must have brought some too."

"This is medicine for special ops, of course i was going to bring it." Liana looked at Jiang Li, "Jiang Li, you seemed to have understood something in your cultivation just then?"

"I don't know, I think i just entered into Deep Sleep when i was exercising. It felt like I was sleep walking and knew of no fatigue. My strength was greatly increased but when the state was gone, I felt

exhausted." Jiang Li thought about the occurrence just then.

"Congratulations, you have entered the third stage of Deep Sleep and can go into stasis soon." Lara's tone was that of envy, "In the top ten of our school, it is quite possible that only you and Ou Yang Xing have reached into Deep Sleep third stage."

"Ou Yang Xing isn't able to go into stasis?" Jiang Li asked, "Is there no one in stasis at our school?"

"Hmph! If he could go into stasis, he would be cocky as hell." Lara and Liana both didn't like this person.

After some rest, Liana suddenly jumped up, "Jiang Li, let's spar, how bout it?"

"Okay!"

Chapter 39 - Blood Feud

"Nice!" Liana twisted her arms, curling inwards as if laying a trap, just waiting for the beast to enter. It was almost like the simulated martial expert from the exams, both arms forming ovals that connected with each other, able to break bones if one was to come in contact.

Jiang Li retracted his arms and sent out another claw. Shua... There were claw trails everywhere as if it there were flames burning.

[Fire Dragon Scorching the Plains]!

This move was about unpredictable attacks at great speed and ferocity, breaking the opponent. It was like a dragon breathing fire everywhere, scorching the earth.

Jiang Li could send out more than ten claws per second, each one like a little flame, with the faintest of ghost trails.

"Strong!" Liana facial expression was grim, but she did not falter. Flipping her wrists she pushed outwards, C rank [River Palm] utilized once again.

Each palm came with great coursing pressure, like waves, breaking apart the air and landing upon the shore. Each clash with Jiang Li's [Dragon Subjugation] brought forth great force.

The two stuck close, each mercilessly battering one another in a fight of

pure physical prowess. A mistake could cost an arm or leg.

Lara stared intently, hopeful that she could see some flaw in Liana's fighting style. Since a young age she had been rivals with Liana, both at edge with each other. Even their families had feuds between each other.

Xixixi...

At this moment, from the tall trees of the ravine came sounds, as if something was approaching really fast.

Lara pricked her ears, and felt her chest suddenly tighten. "Shit! Stop fighting, something dangerous is approaching!"

Sou...

The fighting duo immediately stopped. They had sensed a dangerous presence as well.

Before they could even put on their armor, human figures leaped out from the dense undergrowth.

That's right, human figures.

Not beasts, nor aliens, but humans.

Jiang Li, Liana and Lara converged together in a triangle, looking on at the people that came from the undergrowth. It was clear that this group of people weren't part of the army, nor students undertaking the trials.

They wore tattered garments, some wearing animal pelts. Each gave off a strong aura. A few had proper white clothes with styles similar to ancient people. They carried long swords and spears, as if warriors from the Bronze Age.

“Otherworldly Demons!”

A leader took a step forward, his face mature and determined, possessing great temperament. He was extremely handsome, and looked about 27 or so. His eyes were like the stars, possessing great charisma. A sharp sword was by his side, glinting coldly against the light.

Liana and Lara were both frozen momentarily, because this man was just so handsome, so full of charisma. Any male student of the school was trash in comparison.

However, the two words uttered by the man was language from Earth, shocking the trio into realization. They knew what they have encountered.

Warriors from another planet.

Beings that lived and breathed like humans.

Mankind had invaded their world in a bid for resources. They imprisoned them in restricted zones of the army. Though they had a very primitive culture, it was a martial arts culture.

“Are these the warriors from another planet? Will we have to fight and possibly even kill them?” Jiang Li carefully sprouted.

"Yep, they are warriors from another planet..." Lara's expression was serious, "They called us Otherwordly Demons. There is no room for negotiation between us. They would not hesitate to butcher us, the 'demons', and so when we fight we must not show mercy."

"They're so strong. Almost all of them have reached a life force of 1. This leader is even stronger than us..." Liana had an unsettled tone in her voice.

This was real blood and steel. If it was beasts, the trio wouldn't be scared.

But living and breathing humans were a different matter. To students, it was the trials of fire and blood.

"Gentlemen!" The leader pointed his sword at the trio, his tone suddenly anguish, upbeat, vehement, with killing intent. "Otherwordly Demons have invaded our homeland, killing our kin, plundering our treasures, taken our sons as prisoners of war, imprisoned us in the jungles as part of the trials you people undergo. They are cruel beyond measure! Why would god not kill them?" The man shrieked in anguish, his voice shattering rocks and stone, almost sending the trio into a daze.

Resentment only possible when one had lost his home and his family emanated from the leader, an aura of retribution against the earth, the heavens and all living things.

Not matter it be Lara or Jiang Li, the trio trembled with terror. Any quarrels between students were like mice and cats in comparison to this

man. This man was a killer born forth from mountains of bodies and rivers of blood.

Jiang Li could understand the language spoken by the man.

It was the language of Earth, however stuttered. It is obvious that this man came to learn it, but the way he spoke it was very jittery and bland, but also filled with killing intent.

"Jiang Li, Liana, this is a moment of life and death. The leader is the strongest, and hates humans the most. If we were to fall into his hands we'd be fucked! We must fight for our lives!" Lara suddenly said, "Liana and I will kill the leader, the rest is up to you Jiang Li. Do not show mercy! If we don't kill them, they will kill us."

Finally they would start killing real people.

Jiang Li hesitated for a moment.

But he hardened his heart moments later. He did not intentionally want to cross swords, but would only fight in self defense. Moreover they were outnumbered, and the ones who would lose their lives were undetermined.

"Kill!"

The leader suddenly lashed out, his body like a bow. His sword came slashing forward like a rainbow trail. Jiang Li could even hear the sound of the man's spine propelling him forward, like a bowstring snapping in

place.

Though the man was about 50 meters from them, it took him less than two seconds before the sword reached the trio.

The trio darted in separate directions.

Hua!

The sword created a deep trench in the ground, testament to the man's sword skill, and a life force of more than 1. The only problem was that long periods of time spent in the woods has decreased his stamina, his body plagued by wind and frost.

This was the only chance of survival for the trio, otherwise they're dead meat.

"Attack Liana!"

Lara suddenly lashed out with her soft-steel sword. Immediately needles homed in on the man like a locust swarm. Lara was adept at using needles, phantom attacks that were extremely hard to dodge.

The penetrative power of the needles was beyond the strength of steel and glass.

Shua!

The man lifted his blade, the reflected light forming bands of lightning

that stopped all the needles in a blink. Afterwards he leaped in the air, and with footsteps like a panther came rushing in at Lara, his sword in beautiful arc like that of a sparrow, aiming straight for her neck.

If she was hit, her head would immediately be cut clean off.

This was not a simulation, but real combat. It could be said that most students would never encounter such dangers in their life.

A fight to the death opens as such.

Jiang Li did not bear complex thoughts and went all out.

Though these people had been imprisoned as test subjects and were pitiful, they were surrounded and in a weaker position. Protecting himself and his peers was the primary concern.

Hou!

Seven other warriors rushed in the battle.

"Yimo tacha!"

"Yimo tacha!"...

Yelling war cries, they unleashed a furious assault that bore the fury of having lost their homes and country.

Though what they had shouted was alien language, Jiang Li could still sense the meaning behind it. It was "Slay the Otherwordly Demons!"

In their eyes, the trio were not humans but Otherwordly Demons.

A spear reached them first. The tip was covered in blood, evident of countless killings of wild beasts. Full of bloodlust the spear quivered up and down in an arc that went straight for the throat.

In that instant, Jiang Li had felt that his eyes, throat, heart, groin and other vitals were blanketed and locked down in a zone.

The opponent was a master spearman, and with one strike sealed off all escape routes, leaving Jiang Li bereft of choice.

The person was a warrior clad in animal pelts. His clothes were long ripped and torn, evidence of having lived in the woods for long periods, suffering great hardship. But he did not possess a wild and untamed aura, indicating perhaps he was of a high social class in his home planet.

Jiang Li did not fall back, because he could not. If he were to make an exit, then the spear would turn on Lara and Liana, creating great pressure for them, and even possibly make the leader kill them outright!

"Long!"

Under great pressure, he claws at the spearhead with [Blue Dragon

Upsurge] of [Dragon Subjugation]. He also coupled it silently with a hand sign that was similar to a dragon claw of the [Spiritual Emperor Seal].

In his mind, a momentary contemplation transformed himself into a dragon that ambled across the universe, and with a shriek clouds of asteroids would come crashing down.

At the same time, deep in his throat came a soft dragon hymn, a surge of qi that came rising up from the stomach and out of his mouth.

At the same times his hands tremored in a dream-like trance, bringing mirage visions.

The warrior from the other planet faltered for a moment, his spirit influenced by Jiang Li's hypnotism. However it was not a complete one but halfway, showcasing the strong spiritual strength of the man, not easily swayed by hypnotism.

Yet this momentary pause was enough to reveal a fatal flaw. Battles between master martial artists were won or lost in millimeters.

Crack!

Jiang Li captured the moment and traced his hands along the spear and towards the body, viciously severing the main arteries of the neck.

The warrior fell down, passing out.

Jiang Li did not even look down and grabbed the spear to stop the

other incoming warriors, stopping four in the process.

The spear was made completely of metal, more than 40kg in weight. Wielding it was very hard, but for Jiang Li who had a life force of 1, it was the same as wielding a stick, easy and effortless.

Having a weapon in hand increased Jiang Li's fighting power substantially. He was unafraid even in the face of many adversaries.

There were about four warriors who had aimed their weapons at Jiang Li.

Their life force was around 1. Though they should have been in a crushing disposition, and fighting them one on one was hard enough, Jiang Li had the [Spiritual Emperor Seal] emerged in his abilities, carrying a hypnotic effect. In addition, these people had lived in the jungle for long periods, grounds of inadequate nutrition which had deteriorated their stamina. How could they compare with people like Jiang Li who downed multiple nutrition serums a day?

Originally in that moment before, Jiang Li could have killed the spear wielder easily. But he was merciful and chose not to do so, as knocking them out would achieve the same effect – taking them out of the fight.

Chapter 40 - One Stroke of the Sword to the Throat

The battle continues!

The warriors once again band together and come charging in. The first to reach were the spear wielders. The spear they held were like stinging vipers and a small thrust would reach Jiang Li almost immediately. The sword wielders followed in back-up.

In one stroke the swords nearly broke through all of Jiang Li's defenses.

It was a dangerous situation.

Having so many people

Even if Jiang Li had three heads and six arms, being ganged-up by so many people was still impossible to defend

“[Downpour Slash]!”

In that moment he wielded the spear as a sword, and initiated [Downpour Slash]. It was Liana’s martial technique, which when mastered to a high level meant that even in a heavy downpour of rain, not a single drop will fall onto the user.

As right now he is being attacked on all sides, he must protect his vitals and make a retreat.

The spear danced about, blocking attacks from all sides.

Ding! Dong! Sparks flew everywhere, accompanied with the sounds created between clashes of metal and steel.

Every hit bore great killing intent. Jiang Li’s could feel the opposition’s mental attitude of killing the trio at all costs, even sacrificing themselves. It was terrifying.

Jiang Li had never been in such a life and death battle. Even in the battle with Illusory Fox, Illusory Fox didn’t bear as much killing intent as these guys for he was mostly concerned in running away.

Pu!

Jiang Li's back hit a giant boulder as he retreated. By this time his whole body was covered in blood, his clothes shredded by the swords.

On his shoulders, a long gash that reached muscle had soaked his upper body in blood.

It was made by the expert spear wielder.

Performing [Downpour Slash] with a spear proved ultimately inconvenient, and as such Jiang Li's defense was broken. It also showed his lack of battle experience, and that his heart and spiritual training are not at their peak.

The intense pain made the muscles in his whole body convulse.

"Yimo tach!"

Noting that Jiang Li is clearly injured, a lance wielder leaped in the air and thrust forward, his body like a sword fish dashing through the waves.

Jiang Li struggled to defend himself!

Dang!

The spear and lance clashed together, twisting and churning around. Jiang Li's hand was numb, as if unable to grip the spear anymore. After all, two fists are hard to stop the onslaught of four, let alone this many people well versed in battle teaming up on him. Though his stamina was good, he was a mere student, and was not a substantial force in the

grand scheme of fighting.

"Yimo tacha!"

The other warriors circled around, leaping around with an agility more than that of a locust, speed more than that of a leopard. A katana wielding warrior dashed forward, his blade churning with power and force, creating large ripples in the air.

Jiang Li made an exit, as he felt the scent of death brush past.

Shhhhhh!

He had no more exits! With half a foot in a small stream of the ravine, his mobility was impaired greatly.

"Tacha!"

The warriors rushed forward once again, snarling viciously.

Dududu... The lance wielder whipped his weapon around. Though the lance looked slow and heavy, it was extremely fast, projected viciously towards Jiang Li's head.

At the same time other warriors got close and attacked from every angle, each targeting a different organ of Jiang Li.

Right now Jiang Li was not wearing armor, and thus if hit he'd be chopped into pieces.

"Would I die here?" It was Jiang Li's closest experience with death thus more. In his state of mental overdrive, the threat of death stimulated his hidden potential.

"Deep Sleep!"

Suddenly, he entered the stage of Deep Sleep whilst moving, reminiscent of his newly learnt spiritual state.

The dire strait forced him to utilize every ounce of power, and he thrust his spear in all sides, his whole body dancing like dragons and snakes. His spear knocked aside all swords, similar to the move [Boneless Dragon Snake Dance].

In the state of Deep Sleep, his physical prowess increased considerably, even more so than drug stimulants.

Of course, the prerequisite is that he had come to learn the in's and outs of [Boneless Jujitsu], otherwise he would have died long ago.

"Trickling stream hypnotism..." In that instant his spirit merged with that of the stream under his foot. Qi from deep in his underbelly rose up to be a tranquil sound, like that of water droplets.

This was sound hypnotism.

The movement of the attackers immediately become sluggish, their spirit in a dazed state.

Originally, it would be impossible to hypnotize the warriors as their willpower was unshakeable.

But Jiang Li had entered the third stage of Deep Sleep, his spirit powers increasing immensely.

His grasp of the [Spiritual Emperor Seal] had also become elevated.

"Tacha!"

The lance wielder was the first to recover as he was the strongest. Biting his tongue to force himself awake, he stabbed at Jiang Li's throat, attempting to leave the latter bereft of any chance of survival.

Jiang Li had no time to think. Swinging his spear around, he managed to perform [Fire Dragon Scorching the Plains] through the spear, knocking aside the lance.

Pu!

The lance stabbed into his arm, with blood splattering everywhere. Subconsciously he retracted his spear, performing [Returning Black Dragon].

The spear was deeply entrenched in the lance wielder's heart.

Pop!

As if a balloon that had been stabbed by a needle, the lance wielder fell down, convulsing a few times before losing all life signs.

Jiang Li had killed him.

This was an exchange that would only end in either side dying. There was no time to think about the consequences.

Though Jiang Li was covered in wounds, the very moment his spear penetrated the warrior's heart he had felt something blossom from within him. He didn't know whether it was sadness, numbness or relief... But he did experience a lot of emotions, and he felt that he had become more mature.

"Shhhhh!"

Having killed one of the warriors, he made the sound of trickling water again, and this time supported it with a swaying spear that bears the essence of hand seals from [Spiritual Emperor Sign]. If one was to look at Jiang Li right now, he'd been seen as gentle and lapping waves.

Immediately the surrounding warriors fell asleep, unable to focus.

Capturing this chance, Jiang Li jerked his spear, aiming for the heads of the warriors.

They all flew outwards, knocked out. Jiang Li had managed to control his killing desire. His heart was one of mercy, nurtured through long periods of feral cat feeding. He valued life to the utmost, unlike other people that had killed, whom were likely to sate their inner demons by more killings.

"How's Lara and Liana?"

Having finished his duty, he looked towards the other side of the ravine to find the three locked in an intense battle.

Though Lara and Liana were teaming up against the leader, they were soaked in blood with many wounds. Each of the leader's attacks possessed great killing intent and hate, hate born forth from losing his homeland and family.

In comparison Lara and Liana had a much weaker will in the fight, for they had never killed before.

"Yimo tach!"

Suddenly the leader's sword fanned out, as if a peacock spreading her tail!

Dang!

The sword Liana was holding was sent flying.

Afterwards, the cruelty of steel brushed past her tender neck.

Her eyes were filled with terror, and she attempted to retreat.

But the sword easily sliced through skin.

A spray of blood was sent in the air.

One stroke of the sword at the throat!

The scene of blood spraying from Liana's neck deeply triggered Jiang Li's mental state. He couldn't think of anything else and his vision turned dark red.

A beautiful female student now lay before him covered in blood.

It was at this very moment that he realized the ruthlessness of survival.

Even caged beasts were extremely dangerous.

"Liana!" A haze covered Jiang Li's vision, and internal secretions worked furiously to keep up with his mental state.

Sou!

The spear in his hands shot forward towards the leader.

Jiang Li had entered the state of Dream to Power, increasing his physical capabilities by twice as much. A single throw sent the spear hurtling like a lightning across the distance of more than thirty meters, threatening the leader's livelihood.

"Lara, save Liana!"

Jiang Li rolled to the side and picked up a katana. He dashed forward in a straight manner, as if a tiger exiting the woods.

"Liana, Liana!"

At the same time Lara fell back and grabbed Liana.

"Die!" The leader spoke earthly language, and chased after the girls, intent on cutting them to pieces.

It was extremely dangerous, because at this moment the spear had reached his backside. If he continued his pursuit, he would succeed in killing the girls, but at the cost of his own life.

He turned around to stop the spear.

The spear bounced upwards.

But his sword shook with the impact, and an array of dents showed up on the sword edge. Jiang Li was way too powerful. It was obvious in the Dream to Power state Jiang Li was stronger than him.

Jiang Li charged in, small gales by his side. He cut down with all his might, like a heavy torrent of rain, creating ripples in the air.

"Fuck!" The leader had sensed Jiang Li's increase in power and speed, and felt frustrated. He coiled and twirled his sword around, making many arcs in the air.

Jiang Li could feel that with every clash of his weapon against the sword, his power had been defused. The enemy was adept in the art of swords, and even used Jiang Li's own power against him. It was like the peak of mortal swordsmanship.

His own arms, shoulders and body were covered in wounds, blood still seeping from them. If he were to continue the battle he'd most likely die.

"Rain!"

Jiang Li used [Downpour Slash] once again. In his mind he contemplated a thunderstorm, every bit of his spirit becoming rain that fell upon the earth. The sound of the katana slicing through air merged with the rhythm of his breathing, as if rain dripping on leaves. The area near him gave off the sense of an imminent downpour.

Between the strokes of his katana, the bright reflection of the steel dazzled the eyes, making people want to fall asleep and fall under hypnotism.

"This is..." The change in sword styles shook the conscious of the leader.

He could no longer focus, and felt tired to the utmost, on the brink of sleeping.

Hua!

Jiang Li swiveled his katana around and made contact with the leader's arm. Blood gushed out after the impact.

Jiang Li had wounded him!

"Otherworldly Demon!" Bloodlust covered the eyes of the leader. By biting his tongue which sent signals of pain to his brain, the leader made great efforts to break free of the hypnotism. He continued to swing his sword, lusting after Jiang Li's life

Each stroke was like a poisonous viper, deadly and chilling.

"Die!"

Jiang Li did not budge and transformed his sword style once again, inputting the {Spiritual Emperor Seal} into his swordsmanship. Thunder claps accompanied each movement of his katana, each attack more ferocious the last. He ignored the blood on his body, as if willing to fight even if his head had been cut off!

This was a mental state that exceeded the limits of the human body.

It was the moment between life and death!

Chapter 41 - Dream of Returning Home

Swords collided.

The white clothed leader retreated back three steps all of a sudden. Jiang Li launched another attack with his sword before his opponent could catch his breath. Once again, it was windy and white.

Finally, Jiang Li could put his mind into the combat and his power greatly increased.

If the piercing light of a sword and sound waves can hypnotise, then breathing rhythm can also do so as well. The white clothed leader's spirit seemed to have entered an illusion/dream.

The long sword that he wielded moved slower and slower.

Hua La!

Jiang Li stabbed again, and managed to hack off one of the white clothed leader's arms. Fresh blood gushed out like a fountain.

"Yimo Tacha!"

The white clothed leader lost an arm but the severe pain made him clear-headed suddenly and aroused from his stupor. He appeared to have

recognised his defeat but a flash of the fierce expression in his eye revealed his belief of the last land with the enemy.

The long sword vibrated. His whole body was red with blood. Suddenly the sword let out the strongest light that no person could stop. The long knife burst open and pierced Jiang Li in the chest.

But at this time, Jiang Li struck again. The knife fell to the opponent's waist and cut through, causing his internal organs and intestines to flow from the inside out. It was impossible for him to survive.

Originally, he should have withstood the attack by Jiang Li, but he wanted to sacrifice himself to kill the enemy. He did not block it, instead he charged forward so that the knife could cut a little deeper. This way he could get closer to Jiang Li and fiercely pierce his chest with the sword.

Jiang Li took back his long knife, and fiercely snapped off the sword in his chest to prevent the opponent from pulling the sword out and causing blood to burst from his chest.

CanCanCan!

This battle was simply tragic/heartrending.

PuTong!

The white clothed leader fell to the ground, and his eyesight blurred.

And because Jiang Li didn't pull the sword out and snapped it from the middle instead, it was still buried within his chest. Blood didn't leak out so his body stood firmly.

"Why?" The white clothed leader collapsed onto the ground and with his last ounce of strength he struggled to sit up. He watched Jiang Li closely, "Our home is ravaged by you demons. I cannot accept this, I cannot accept that I will just die like this...my family, my brothers, my sisters...why is fate on your side?"

Jiang Li felt miserable inside when he heard the word, "Fate...". Although he defeated his opponent, he was not even slightly happy. "Race, survival, universe, family..." These words heavily oppressed his mind, an unspeakable pain.

"Dreamt for many millenniums, what era is it now?"

Suddenly, the white clothed leaders eyes drooped down and murmured, "I really hope that this is a dream. When I wake up, I will return to my home, my hometown's paddy field, yellow dog, fruit trees, the neighbour's daughter...my mum and dad...I am back..."

The voice he used was the from the language that humans on earth spoke. It was very gentle and had no murderous spirit.

He died.

He didn't return to his hometown, but died on the other side of the starry sky.

Jiang Li plopped and fell down. He could not move from head to toe but he did not pass out and die. His consciousness was very clear. The

battle this time, the fight for life and death, he became a true warrior.

His body was full of scars, especially where the sword had stabbed into his chest but he did not care. Deep within his heart, it was peaceful.

"Jiang Li, are you ok..." Lara ran over in a hurry and brought out the precious medicinal liquid. ChiChiChi. She sprayed it everywhere and the blood stopped. The cells wriggled around, and soon after, the injuries completely closed up on the body.

"Eat this bolus* Jiang Li." She took out a pill right away.

A sweet aroma filled their nostrils.

"What is it?" Jiang Li said with difficulty, "It looks very precious."

"This is a bioactive strengthening bolus. After consuming it, it will protect your vital functions and make sure they don't disappear. The sword in your chest is too deep. I will pull it out now to stop the bleeding, but once I pull it out, blood will spray, so you must take the medicine..." Lara said hurriedly.

"What about Xue Ling?" Jiang Li ignored the condition of his injuries.

"Her larynx has been cut, however I treated it in time. It is now connected but she still has some difficulty breathing. She will recover in a bit because she brought the precious blood cell regeneration liquid spray." Lara said.

"Then I can set my mind at ease." Modern technology was very well developed. There was always the possibility of treatment as long as people did not die immediately. Especially the eldest daughter of this kind of wealthy family, carried a very large amount of precious medicine, and even some secret medicine from the army. Even if the arms were cut off, they can be immediately reconnected, then sprayed with some medicine and bandaged. Surgery can be performed after a long time and the arm can be restored as good as it ever was.

At this time, Xue Ling had already sat up. She looked pale, and a biological bandage was wrapped around her throat. Her voice was hoarse as she spoke, "If I didn't retreat in time, it would've been my head that was cut off and not just my larynx. Then nothing could save me..."

"It's fine as long as you're ok..." Jiang Li went lifeless, and his expression blurred/dimmed. "You have your home(land), your parents, the little girl next door. I also have my home, my parents, my schoolmates...we are both protecting important things...I have to protect them no matter how cruel/harsh the universe is. They will not become the second you..."

Xue Ling and Lara's expression flashed when they heard Jiang Li's words.

Jiang Li took the bolus from Lara in between his speech. Indeed he felt his body become refreshed and energetic. He grabbed the sword in his chest and pulled it fiercely.

Rip!

Blood sprayed out. Massive blood loss caused his head to become dizzy and suddenly weak. He nearly died.

If he didn't take the biological cell activation medication, he may have immediately died or suffered great damage.

Lara promptly sprayed on the medication. The wounds no longer bled and immediately coagulated. She then compressed some of the precious medicine. Only then, did Jiang Li's complexion look a little better.

"I'm ok Lara, it's not serious. You should dress the wounds on your body too." said Jiang Li.

After going through the big war, one may well say that the three who were covered in wounds, nearly died by the sword/became souls claimed by the blade. Every one of them felt that they had benefitted from this soul-stirring battle experience.

The three all understood the experience as they calmly dressed their wounds.

One can say, this was the most important spiritual practice in their lives after repeated life and death situations. They would've already died if it wasn't for the modern high-tech biological medicinal liquid/liquid medicine. Xue Ling who was cut by the throat wouldn't have been able to survive.

Every one of them felt that they had matured.

In particular Jiang Li who had never killed someone, killed two people in this battle. The first time was an unconscious act. The second time was because he gave up everything and fought to the bitter end with the other after Xue Ling had had her throat cut.

To him, the two killing experiences were both a form of melancholy and a kind of relief. He reflected on this kind of sentiment and the change in his soul very calmly.

"There are still some who are not dead but just unconscious." said Lara. "What do we do about them?"

Xue Ling stood up. "I will finish them off." She had just been cut by the throat and came back from the gates of hell but she utterly detested these extraterrestrial warriors.

Jiang Li moved his lips, "Let them be. These people will die sooner or later. Don't let slaughter deceive the mind. Let's go."

"Okay." Xue Ling smiled. She originally wanted to kill the extraterrestrial warriors that have fainted. But after a reminder from Jiang Li, killing defenseless people and letting oneself get stained with more blood was not a good thing.

After all they were just students.

The three felt that their stamina had recovered after they rested for a while and quickly left the bloody mountain valley.

With the support of modern technology medication, their injuries were nothing. Of course it was very hard to get the valuable medicine. Civilians could not enjoy this privilege at all. Only families like Lara and Xue Ling's, who had property worth over a hundred million and those who took care of the children of the rich could have them.

The Xue and Zhou family were both largely orientated families.

Their property was worth over a hundred million.

But all the other juniors in their family could not carry such expensive medicine.

Lara and Xue Ling were both outstanding people who had high hopes/very good chance of getting into Astral University. They would naturally enjoy the wide variety of resources from their family.

The three wore their armour to protect themselves and travelled back and forth in the forest after the first battle.

They experienced their individual practice results. Each one of them felt that they had greatly improved.

Especially Jiang Li. He killed two extraterrestrial warriors all between a life and death fight and victory was revealed in the twinkle of an eye. His spiritual practice received combat training, and settled down a lot. It really started to grow. The use of the variety of martial arts [Boneless Jujitsu], [Dragon Claw Subjugation] and [Spiritual Emporor Seal] was more mature.

Moreover, he found that it was very easy for him to enter into the "divine dream" state/realm, into a deep sleep in the sports battle. The body was not afraid of pain, not afraid of danger, had no fear, was very powerful and had a long endurance.

After the lifting of the state, the body will be weak, and fatigued to the limit. It was very difficult to recover from.

However, once he recovers, his strength would build up.

This was a type of extreme practice method.

"It reeks of blood ahead!"

Lara suddenly stopped, her face solemn.

They had already walked through the forest for five days, and in the five days, they had met many extraterrestrial monsters.

This was a forbidden military zone. It was originally used for practice so really powerful things would definitely not appear.

During the five days, with the support of medicine and super nutrients, the three completely recovered. All had matured and felt that they got a lot stronger than they were at school.

Jiang Li formed a team with Xue Ling and Lara and shared a lot of

benefits. At least he got to eat and drink things that were supplements that he usually would not have access to.

Of course Jiang Li also served as the role of a guardian. There were many times when the three encountered danger. It was all him who solved the problem. His spirit and soul were strengthening step by step. His sixth sense was very sharp and he could often unconsciously sense danger that arose suddenly.

Once, the three passed by a cliff, just as they were about to go over, Jiang Li suddenly sensed danger and they immediately stopped.

Indeed just as they stopped, many huge rocks rolled down the cliff ahead. If they had advanced a couple more steps, they would've been smashed into pieces.

After these incidents, the two girls were surprised that Jiang Li's soul practice had seemingly surpassed theirs.

People who have powerful soul practice could indeed detect some danger that arose abruptly but the girls had not reached that level.

"I also smell the scent of blood. Let's go have a look. Jiang Li walked over and the jungle opened to a small piece of (empty) land which roughly estimated 10,000sq metres. Many wooden huts were built on top.

It was the people who lived in the jungle.

They used to farm by the slash and burn method and hunted.

There was only one possible way for them to be able to live in military jungle zone, and that is that it was the residence of the extraterrestrial warriors who had been put here by the army. In order to live, they can only build houses, and hunt to survive.

The instant they saw the clearing in the jungle and the wooden hut, the three tensed up, prepared to battle at any time.

But all they saw were corpses everywhere.

*bolus - large round medicinal ball

Chapter 42 - The Fall of the Big Ship

It really was the extraterrestrial warriors, some were lying on the ground, with deep wounds all over their bodies while some others had their heads cracked open. There were at least a couple dozen bodies, most of which were adult men but there were also women and children.

The smell of blood attracted large amounts of forest flies and mosquitoes. A swarm buzzed and flew around, making one nauseous.

"This is the residence of the extraterrestrial warriors. The killing, the person who killed them is very powerful. You see traces of the battle?" Lara pointed to a broken knife in the distance, "This sword was snapped off by someone. If my guess is correct, this should be the [Dragon Howl Iron Shirt,] a C-ranked martial art. It is very difficult to practice. Only one person in the school has fully grasped it and that is Ouyang Xing. "

[Dragon Howl Iron Shirt] is a type of ancient martial arts. After learning it, the body becomes hard as steel. One can resist and fight back with extraordinary strength. In modern society, with the addition of many medication that builds one's strength, this type of ancient martial art was much more powerful than ancient times.

In fact, modern society had abundant resources, as long as any one person practices hard, their martial art will have a leap of progress compared to the ancient times.

Xue Ling saw a child around the age of five to six who had been killed in the tree alive. She didn't even have the heart to keep looking. Although the extraterrestrial warriors were their enemies, they knew it was

expected to kill enemies when the two sides fight. This is the law of the jungle. But it is a moral issue to kill defenseless enemies.

In the ancient times, there was no policy to kill prisoners.

"I didn't think Ouyang Xing was this cruel." Lara shook her head, "Could it be that he did this in order to get the reward for first place?"

"I think the trials that the military arranged are contrary to human morals." Xue Ling could not bear to look, "Let's go. It's too miserable here."

"The military has military considerations." Jiang Li thought, "Most human beings are not able to tolerate such things happening, but since we want to test to become Astral University students, the standing height is different. For mankind in the universe to survive and be strong, we must do so, otherwise if we encounter a more powerful civilization, perhaps we humans will be like them, locked up in a cage, and the objects of an experiment. "

Over the past couple days, he had been thinking deeply.

"Yes." Lara said, "We learnt history, and the first lesson talked about the large alien ship that fell on earth two hundred years ago, causing war in various countries. Then humans studied that alien ship and found that the technology surpassed humans a lot, and the message that was left was that the large ship came to conquer the Earth. "

"Yes. Every time I read up to that part in history, I break into a cold

sweat for humans on Earth." Xue Ling also shivered, "If it wasn't the accident of the large alien ship, humans on Earth would perhaps be gone or become experimental white mice. Human technology is behind at least two thousand years compared to alien technology.

"Yes. In accordance with the normal development of human civilization, we would have to ability to jump the wormhole only after two thousand years. This is also the case of the Earth's resources not being consumed. In reality, when various countries on Earth are in war, a large amount of resources have been consumed. Humans are likely to get out of the sky before the demise." Jiang Li shook his head.

"Humans on earth are of the family that is blessed by God." Luo Han also laments, "Is it that the white clothed leader is right, humans on earth are favoured by fate?"

The three were all recalling the time when they learnt about the history of mankind. From 2050, when the alien ship dropped, it underwent a tremendous change and civilization began a large outbreak.

What is it if this is not God's blessing? What is it if it isn't fate?

Every time they read this history, all humans on Earth made progress, because if they slacked a little, fate would be conquered, genocide.

Even though humans on Earth are now strong enough to conquer other planets, they still do not dare to slack off.

In the galaxy full of stars, who knows if they will encounter a more

powerful civilisation.

Also mankind can perhaps never defeat the civilisation where that large ship is situated at because humans have not figured out the source of where the civilisation is.

Jiang Li received the [Great Dream Heart Sutra]. It should belong to the extraterrestrial martial arts. Although the inheritor said that the person who gets the "Great Dream Heart Sutra" will inherit the willpower cut to make the outer demons, but Jiang Li will never do so. He is a human on Earth. Siblings, parents, classmates, are so-called outer demons. To commit suicide was not the normal thought of a person.

No matter what, they had to guard the humans on earth and their home.

He basically didn't care and joked about the thoughts of the white clothed people in the sewer. Remnants of the ideas made him turn against humanity but Jiang Li's brain was not bad to that point yet.

The three left the sanguinary place of residence and continued forward.

Their speed was very fast. In accordance to this basis, they can reach the other exit of the military's forbidden zone within ten days.

The killings that the three experienced in the jungle made them want to hurry back to the idea of modern urban life.

On the way, the three met the bodies of some extraterrestrial warriors

who had been killed. In one move, all living things perished, revealing the strong stamina and life force of the fighter. It was all Ouyang Xing's doing.

During the student trials this time, Ouyang Xing's qualities were significantly higher than everyone else's by a mile.

"Look, Ouyang Xing is right ahead!"

The three followed the marks and advanced forward. After a long time, a river suddenly appeared in front, blocking the path. A man stood by the river, and seemed to be thinking about how to cross the river.

This person was indeed the strongest in the school, Ouyang Xing.

"Ouyang Xing!"

Xue Ling and Lara both greeted, then everyone took off their armour, and faced the river. They couldn't get across wearing the armour.

After fighting in the primeval forest for a very long time, no matter how vile their classmates are, they would feel close when they first encountered them.

This is the so-called nostalgic feeling when meeting an old friend.

Ouyang Xing turned around fiercely. He was not wearing his armour. He was holding the armour in his hands. Clearly he also wanted to hone

himself, and he didn't need the protection of the armour.

"Such strong murderous spirit..."

Jiang Li saw that a kind of chilling atmosphere emitted off this person. Ordinary people couldn't feel it, but for him who was sharp towards spiritual practice, he could clearly feel it.

It seems that Ouyang Xing was possessed by ghosts and evil spirits because he killed too many people.

He did not want to get closer to this person.

It was obviously impossible that evil spirits could possess people, even if modern technology was so advanced, science still did not prove the existence of the soul and spirit, however killing too many people causes one to be psychopathic and it was possible to breed demons in the heart.

"Luo Han, Xue Ling." Ouyang Xing also greeted them, but did not even look at Jiang Li, as if he did not exist, "You act quickly to other people far behind, but are still able to keep up my footsteps?"

"It seems that the river stopped you. How are you going to pass?" Lara could tell that Ouyang Xing was very conceited. Suddenly his face went cold: "Based on your level, you can swim across carrying two pounds of armor to the other side."

"I don't think it's that easy." Jiang Li looked at the deep river. The other

side was at least one kilometer away. The river was very deep, the water was fast-flowing and there a vague feeling that danger seems to have some horrible infestation.

"There are piranhas and crocodiles in this river. There is also another type of fish from another planet called 'fish bone'. They have extremely strong attack and like crabs, their bone grows on the outside. They can drill into mountains and their speed in water is thirty meters per second. When they sprint, they can even pierce a body in one blow. Ouyang Xing said coldly, "I will not stop you guys from swimming across to the other side."

"What do you think Jiang Li? How do we get across?"

Xue Ling said.

"It's simple enough." Jiang Li said, "There are tall trees all around, we can chop them and bundle them together, make them sturdy then immediately cross the river."

"That is actually quite simple."

"En?" Ouyang Xing was surprised for a moment. He did not expect such a simple way to encounter this river. His first thought was how to swim past, but he didn't think he would neglect/overlook/ignore the most simple tool he could use.

This was a knowledge barrier. After the human mind developed, they had a deep understanding of various things, but often overlooked the

most simple and mundane truth. Or during practice, when the body is too superstitious, it ignores how to use the tool.

This was a major flaw on spiritual practice.

Shua! Ouyang Xing suddenly looked at Jiang Li with both his eyes, "What is your name?"

"Jiang Li."

Feeling great hostility, Jiang Li was surprised for a moment, "It can't be. Getting angry over such a small issue, and causing hostility."

"The student who reached a life force of 1 and made great progress in the exam." Ouyang Xing calmed down and nodded, "Yes, I know you. Your family is not wealthy. You must be gifted to be able to practice to this point?"

"I cannot say it is talent, but there is a little will to practice." Jiang Li did not feel slightly scared.

When an ordinary person stands in front of Ouyang Xing, they would feel the power of the opponent. Their subconscious retreats because his life force was too strong. However Jiang Li acted as if nothing had happened. His battle with the white clothed leader's extraterrestrial warriors caused his spiritual practice to reach a deeper level.

The Ouyang Xing in front of him was very strong, but he did not care.

The clouds were pale and a light breeze was blowing.

"Demonstrate your strength to me then!"

Peng!

Ouyang Xing suddenly attacked just as he spoke. One attack caused an explosive breeze and thunder to boom across. Between each attack, the air blew up and explosions rippled through the air. People would feel dizzy even without being hit.

This was true martial arts.

The fighting technique of people like Zhang Yue and Zheng Wenbing were simply weak compared to Ouyang Xing.

This was a D-ranked martial art, the [Military Exploding Fist Thrust].

The martial art wasn't considered brilliant, but could be exquisite from within the ordinary.

The moves of [Military Exploding Fist Thrust] are simple and clear. Every punch is a thrust, a chain of attacks cooperating with each step. The attacks were fierce, a thrust, a blast of air.

This is the real secret of the [Exploding Fist Thrust].

Based on Zhang Yue's stamina, to hit up to eight or nine bursts at most would be pretty good. The following punches would be weak with no explosion. It simply can not be called martial arts.

And now, as soon as Ouyang Xing made a move, using the palm as a punch. It suddenly changed each other. Between movements, each explosion was actually like repeated explosions of firecrackers, causing people to become disoriented.

Jiang Li knew the oncoming force was ferocious, and did not dare to neglect it. He had already taken precautions. His body was delicate and boneless. The general dance that dragons and snakes do was the [Boneless Dragon Snake Dance].

Ouyang Xing did not even touch Jiang Li's body after ten consecutive attacks.

Chapter 43 - Training Exercise Concludes

"Your [Boneless Dragon Snake Dance] is not bad." Ou Yang Xing's face became more bleak and howled. His howl sounded like the roar of tigers and dragons as a gust of air came out from his mouth. In that instant, his whole body grew a circle thicker while both his power and speed increased substantially.

"Careful, this is [Dragon Howl Metal Shirt]!" Lara and Liana warned in unison .

As Ou Yang Xing used his Qi, his hands grew much more plump. Their colours turned black as his hand became like a metal hand. Looking like a fan, his hands reached snatched out with the piercing sound of air.

Jiang Li's eyes suddenly shone brightly as his vision became blurry again. Once again, he entered the state of 'dream into power'. The adrenaline in his body rushed as he reciprocated with a fist too.

[Boulder Breaking Bone Shatter]!

Hong Long!

Their fists collided and each retreated seven or eight steps back. They were evenly matched.

Crack crack... ...The bones in Jiang Li's body made noises as the same

occurred to Ou Yang Xing.

The two stared at each other as both of them didn't dare to make the next move.

"He is strong..." the dream to power state was gone after Jiang Li was shocked. His body began to ache and could only go into the state once again after some rest.

But if Ou Yang Xing attacked again at this time, he would definitely be unable to defend.

Afterall, Ou Yang Xing was already 1.1 at the exam and he was only 1.

The difference of 0.1 was huge.

But Ou Yang Xing didn't continue his attack. Obviously, he was also hesitant. With the cold stares from Liana and Lara from the sides, he felt a heavy threat.

"He could stop my [Dragon Howl Iron Shirt]." Ou Yang Xing was also shocked. His eyes narrowed as an intense killing intent rose from the depth of his heart.

In the school, he was always at the very top but today, he actually came evenly matched with an unknown kid. How could he let this be?

Fortunately not many people saw this, otherwise, it would be a huge

blow to his fame.

Meanwhile, Jiang Li would rise to fame and be taken seriously by the school.

"Ou Yang Xing, why did you suddenly attack Jiang Li? We're all students." Lara stood out in reproach.

"Ou Yang Xing, are you a psychotic killer? Although those people were alien martial artists, why did you kill even the kids and women? Do you still have any conscience left in you?" Liana was furious every time she thought about the horror that had occurred in the forest.

"What does that count for? It was only a small training exercise." Ou Yang Xing did not care at all, "If you want to get into Astral University, there will be more killings. If you can't even bear this, how can you endure the cruelty of the universe? But you two seem very protective of this kid?"

"Stop talking bullshit." Lara frowned: "Let's cross the river and arrive at the military base first. As for your match with Jiang Li, there are plenty of opportunities for you two to fight at school. We're all students of the enrichment class."

"Hmph! I won't be playing with you guys!"

Ou Yang Xing looked at Jiang Li deeply once again before suddenly darting out into the forest. He dealt consecutive blows onto a tree as thick as the upper human leg. He broke 7 to 8 of these with a mere three

fists. He gathered them together, tied them before throwing them onto the river. He jumped onto it and used a stick to row. The raft drifted towards the middle and arrived at the other side in no time. He made a big leap once again and disappeared from sight.

He was just like a humanoid havoc wreaking machine.

When Jiang Li saw him break a tree with a few punches, he knew his strength were still a bit weaker than Ou Yang Xing's. Jiang Li knew that he still needed to work hard.

But he wasn't disappointed, Ou Yang Xing was brought up eating all sorts of super supplements, he had good teachers, training equipment, nutritionist and spiritual teachers. Meanwhile, Jiang Li only had a short time of growth.

"Ou Yang Xing's stamina is indeed strong." Lara's face was gloomy: "Jiang Li, you need to be careful because your power is enough to threaten him. That person has a narrow heart."

"Yes, the teachers and principal would treat you differently just because you two were even during that fist clash." Liana found the key point.

"I still need to work hard. That person is really strong. No wonder so many extraterrestrial warriors died in his hands." Jiang Li shook his hand: "However, I lack resources. If I have enough resources, I am confident that i can chase up to him in no time and beat him!"

"Resources are minor but the spiritual cultivation is the major thing."

Lara said: "If you can reach stasis, then the whole school would support you to the best that it can. You know, there's no one in our school that can enter stasis."

"I thought there were a few but it turns out there really is none." Jiang Li shook his head: "In the battle with Ou Yang Xing just then, he was also third stage deep sleep."

"Let's go, this training exercise is near the end. We have all learned quite a lot." Liana smiled. She was much more intimate with Jiang Li and Lara after their life and death experience together.

Although, these two still had arguments.

As they talked, they cut down trees and made a raft to cross the river. They headed towards the other exit of the military base.

There were no dangers at all on the road.

On the tenth day, everyone had gathered inside the large room of the military base.

Jiang Li suddenly realised that there were a few people missing.

His acute senses told him that these few students were probably gone. Even Liana nearly died much less other people.

General Song raised his head: "The overall results of this exercise is not

bad. Unfortunately, accidents occurred to a few students. However, these are necessary casualties and before you participated in this exercise, you all signed a contract declaring that the military and school was not accountable for this! This is also the first lesson for getting into Astral University. Don't think that the trouble of the outside world are irrelevant to you just because you are the spoilt brats in your own families. From today onwards, you are true soldiers! You must be ready to sacrifice for humanity at any time! The cowardly and timid cannot get into Astral University!"

"Yes!"

Many students had matured and their temperaments went under overwhelming changes.

Even Zhang Yue, Zheng Wenbing, Yang Wu reduced their arrogance.

"Now, I declare the conclusion to this exercise! You all have successfully completed this exercise. The first, Ou Yang Xing, can come up for his reward. He killed the most alien warriors!"

"Yes!"

Ou Yang Xing sneered at Jiang Li..

His look spelling an obvious: "Just you wait!"

The first place of this exercise was still taken by Ou Yang Xing.

He received a 100,000 star coins worth of military supplements.

However, for a wealthy person like him, 100,000 star coins was nothing. He was only fighting for honour.

Jiang Li also wanted this prize. However, it require him to massacre. He gave up on this. There were many ways of earning money. Why kill to earn money?

"Now, the exercise has been concluded. The military will send you back to the school. Subsequently, the school will arrange for your next training exercise."

"Yes!"

All the students felt more lively upon hearing that they could finally leave this forest and return to the city.

In no time, a flying bus drove over and carried all the students towards the school.

When it had arrived at the school, everyone looked as though a heavy burden had been released from their shoulders. They so desperately wanted to go home, take a hot shower and sleep a whole night to relieve their mental and physical fatigue.

"This time, you guys have done very well," The principal said in the

meeting room: "They have all passed a cruel exercise. Although a few students were misfortunate, it was their choice. If you want to get into Astral University, you must put your life and death out of perspective! The school will do the proceedings and have already contacted your parents. From tomorrow onwards, you don't need to train anymore. Rest up well and absorb what you have gained from this exercise. Furthermore, the school will open the martial arts master system to students with a life force of 1! You can train for 30 minutes weekly."

"Martial arts master system...." Jiang Li's swelled up with joy upon hearing this news. This was the benefit of being a top student.

The school wasn't stingy on using resources to cater for the best students.

Of course, the martial arts master system needed money for operation. It was definitely split paid by the rest of the students. The school could not make losses in business. Afterall, when the school took in an extra 50 students for this enrichment class, the families of the students had to pay a large sum of money.

"Now, you are dismissed! The next training exercise will be sent to your email via your student chip. Make sure to check it!"

The principal left as soon as he finished talking.

Now, the students of the enrichment class all left, each of them desperate to get home. Even Ou Yang Xing couldn't be bothered to mess around with Jiang Li and wanted to absorb what he had learned during this exercise.

Jiang Li arrived at home.

"Big brother, you're finally home. How was the exercise?" Little sister Jiang Xuan hurried and rushed over: "Mum and dad didn't even go to work after hearing you're coming back. They're cooking right now for you."

"Jiang Li, you're home."

Dad Jiang Zhendong walked out from the room. He was very happy: "I heard people died during this enrichment class exercise. I was really worried. Are you fine?"

"I'm fine." Of course Jiang Li wouldn't tell them about how he nearly died, having his chest pierced by a sword. He didn't want his parents to be worried: "Yes some students had tragedies but I'm different from them, I'm a student with a life force of 1!"

"Correct, you're a 1 life force student." Jiang Zhengdong laughed. He was very pleased: "Hurry up and eat. Today we bought Sha Luo meat especially for you."

"Where's little brother? Has he called the family recently?" Jiang Li asked: "Little sister can also eat too."

"No, he has signed a contract with the military. Not only is he unable to come home, he is also unable to contact us." Mum walked out from the kitchen and was a bit worried: "But the family received 100,000 star coins

as family settling allowance!”

“What? 100,000 star coins as family settling allowance?”

Jiang Li almost jumped but he wasn’t the slightest bit happy. His face was very serious: “Just what sort of dangerous training did little brother sign up for? Why is the family settling allowance so high?”

He had a bad premonition.

Because the family settling allowance was too great.

“It’s fine, regarding the family settling allowance, we have received a message from the military. It was a personally signed order from a general with the last name Wang.” Jiang Zhendong knocked on the chopsticks: “Jiang Tao left this family settling allowance. This sum will be used to cater for you. This is also your brother’s will. Jiang Li, after all, you only have one semester before high school examinations. Don’t disappoint the hopes your little brother has for you!”

Chapter 44 - Teaching in The Dreams

Although Jiang Li didn't have a good feeling about it, there was nothing he could do. He couldn't go to the military and search for his little brothers information. He didn't have that much authority. He could only ask when his brother got back.

"Mum and Dad, you don't need to use the hundred thousand star coins on me, use it on my little sister instead." He thought about it, " I don't need money right now, I have been studying hypnosis recently and I have earned quite a lot by curing people."

As he spoke, he took out 150,000 starcoins for transaction.

Ding Dong.

150,000 star coins appeared in Jiang Zhendong's account.

"I studied hypnosis, and this is the money I earned by saving the big daughter of the Xue family." Jiang Li said: "We can use this money, as well as little brother's money to support the family and little sister."

"150,000! This much money!" Jiang Zhendong said: "You actually saved the big daughter of the Xue Corporation? No wonder so many people in the Xue Corporation company are so hospitable to us. Our job is easy too."

"I saved her from a fugitive by chance that time when I undertook the mission from the police department." Jiang Li didn't talk about Zhen Wenbing.

"You should be careful and try to avoid participating dangerous missions." Jiang Zhendong said worriedly.

"Oh? You also learned hypnosis? Then you can go test for hypnotist certificate." Mum looked at the account and screamed out: "Right now, hypnosis is a big earning career."

"You should focus on studying first." The dad refuted immediately: "There is only a term left, you must get into Astral University. A place in Astral University is more important than anything."

"I will do my best!"

Jiang Li clenched his fists.

After he finished eating, he went out again and arrived at the park.

When he arrived at the park secretly, he saw the 3 metre high wall and suddenly sprang up by stepping on the wall as he flipped over it like a wild cat. He controlled his fall perfectly as he fell down without making a sound.

It was as if he was flying on the rooftops and walking on the walls.

"Babies, I'm here to see you!"

He arrived at the familiar place where the litter of homeless cats were skirting around.

They heard Jiang Li's voice and all came surrounding him.

After not seeing them for ten days, Jiang Li realised that they all grew a lot thicker. While he wasn't here, his little sister fed them everyday.

Hua la!

A tiny leopard like Big Black came ramming into Jiang Li's hug.

And below, a few baby kittens clawed at the bottom of his pants. They kept pulling it as a sign of intimacy. All the other homeless cats surrounded him and rolled around as if they were dancing.

"Come, eat, I bought a lot of fish chips for you." Jiang Li took out many fish chips from his bag. The scent was very delicious.

This was the expensive fire fish, the product of another planet. This type of fish was discovered when humans excavated another planet. In the boiling lake beside the volcano where the water was near 100 degrees Celsius lives a type of fish that is not the least bit afraid of the boiling heat. When these fishes were caught, they would freeze to death in a short while. However, their taste is very good and their meat has a yang type of energy that is beneficial to the body. Jiang Li bought some for these kittens.

He was going to feed these cats into big fat healthy cats.

Even wealthy people wouldn't feed their pets with such expensive things but Jiang Li didn't think of these homeless cats as pets. He treated them as friends and family.

If it weren't for these homeless cats, he wouldn't have gotten the Great Dream Heart Sutra. How would he achieve today's accomplishments?

Every cat was eating happily.

Especially big black, after he finished, he stretched his body as if he was dancing. It was also like he was mimicking people throwing punches. Jiang Li laughed as he watched: "Big Black, too bad you're a cat, your understanding and intelligence is far from that of humans. Otherwise, I could teach you martial arts. A cat that knows martial arts, kung fu cat?"

Meow meow.....

Big Black shook his head as if he could understand what Jiang Li said.

Jiang Li gave Big Black a tube of Green god nutritional serum. The loss in life potential Big Black suffered due to fetal respiration were gradually being repaired. Cats needed less nutrition than humans.

"Now, you guys go to sleep."

Jiang Li's hand suddenly moved, a series of after images were imprinted in these cat's eyes and the cats all fell on the ground into deep sleep.

After eating the fire fish, they needed to digest it. Deep sleep was the best option, even better than exercise.

Like caring for babies, Jiang Li put these kitties back in their home one by one before he stopped. These kitties' life forces were increasing bit by bit and he was very happy. It was as if he was raising children.

His hypnosis was getting stronger and stronger.

It was due to his progress in his spiritual state. In the entire school, only he and Ou Yang Xing reached the third stage of deep sleep creating the synopsis of two overlords fighting for supremacy.

With the progress in spiritual cultivation, his hypnosis techniques improved drastically and now he felt that he didn't even have to use [Spiritual Emperor Seal] to acquire the certificate for elementary hypnotist.

After settling these cats, he starting cultivating in the serene and empty park.

This time, he started with the simple practice of [Military Exploding Fist Thrust] to test his physical capabilities.

Peng Peng Peng Peng...

He thrust out consecutive fists with his body like a dragon snake. he fused the stance of [Dragon Claw Subjugation] and [Boneless Dragon Snake Dance] into his movement making himself more agile. His power also increased and he could kill with one fist.

This time, his martial prowess improved a lot mainly because the moment when the long sword pierced his chest during his life and death brawl with the alien warrior, his spirit was washed and felt the secret between life and death.

One explosion! Two....eight....sixteen....36, 40 explosions!

When he smashed out the 40th explosion, he was breathing heavily and felt fatigue.

‘Deep sleep!’ immediately, all sorts of hand signs flashed in his heart as his brain expanded with the pressure of blood. He entered the state of dream into power. The fatigue of his body was irrelevant to him as he neglected his limits and continued attacking! Each fist possessed unimaginable power and was much greater than just before.

Jiang Li tested, with 100 punches, his average fist power was 1 tonne. But if he only punched once, then the power could reach 1.5 tonnes. But now when he entered the third stage of deep sleep, all sorts of internal secretion and adrenaline were emitted and his fist power skyrocketed. It was no surprise if it reached a higher power.

49 explosions!

50 explosions!

60 explosions!

After he smashed out 60 explosions, his spirit returned to normal and his body rained down in sweat. His body was extremely fatigued and the dream state was disabled. It was obvious his body could no longer take it anymore.

"I'm so tired.... Didn't think I could smash out 60 explosions...." Jiang Li hurried to stop and strolled to rest. Half an hour later, he was full of energy again. He sat down cross legged to think.

With this physical capability test, he tested out that if he exercised to the max in the state of deep sleep and his body could no longer take it anymore, he would suddenly wake up and feel extremely tired and his body would be slightly damaged.

"Looks like my body still isn't strong enough, I need to inject more super protein!"

He opened his computer and on it appeared many information about super protein. There was also all sorts of information about hypnosis and he began to study it.

In fact, the fastest way to increase his strength was to go into fetal respiration with the opaque stone in his mouth.

But Jiang Li was definitely not going to do this. Exhausting his life potential was like killing the chicken for the egg.

He decided to rely on himself for cultivation and enter stasis as soon as possible.

As soon as he entered stasis, a new world would be opened before him.

In fact, contemplating the brain of the universe was like a treasure cove. In contemplation, his thought process was many times faster than people of the same state.

In no time, he contemplated the [Spiritual Emperor Seal] and his brain operated at high speeds. His brain cells were full of vigour and his contemplation grew deeper. This was the result of the military exercise.

Contemplating to the limit, he felt as if his brain was connecting to the unknown brain constellation in the depths of the universe. His thought spread as his spirit started to radiate.

This cultivation state was greatly different to the previous states. His spirit became more gentle as it reached outwards. It first touched the sleeping kitties in their home.

He could clearly sense the life state of the kitties. Their bodies were normal. Other than his, his spirit moved as he felt something different to normal because he could sense the almost indiscernible cerebral thinking activity of the kittens.

"What is that?"

His spirit focused on the brains of the kittens.

Immediately, things got blurry as if he was in a dream.

Big Black suddenly became a person. It was a youth in pure black practising fists. The martial arts he practiced was Jiang Li's [Boneless Dragon Snake Dance] and [Military Exploding Fist Thrust].....

"Big Black is that you?" in the dream, Jiang Li asked.

"Jiang Li....." the voice of a child sounded and that pitch black youth stopped to look at Jiang Li.

"Of course." Jiang Li shook in surprise, "I could actually communicate with Big Black in the dream. Then can I teach him stuff and open his wisdom....."

This was spiritual communication.

According to legends, those great monks with great spiritual prowess in the ancient times had the ability to communicate with animals.

For example, Buddha mastering the wild tiger, the immortals giving intellect to foxes and monkeys for them to guard their homes. These were ancient legends but they weren't necessarily fake.

Ancient humans couldn't have such strong physical capabilities as people now but there weren't much resources in the ancient times. The society was simple without all these distraction and was instead much easier for spiritual cultivation. Those great people and sages could cultivate to very high spiritual states.

"Big Black, so you had intelligence too! You're learning my martial arts.....but you have the body of a cat. It's not suitable for you to learn the martial arts of humans. I'll teach you contemplation!"

In the dream, Jiang Li taught Big Black crystal contemplation.

He wanted to see what would happen if a big black cat learnt to cultivate.

Crystal Contemplation was the most suitable elementary cultivation method.

This was selected from countless contemplation methods. Two hundred years ago during the country era, there were many types of contemplation such as Buddhist's [White Bone Pagoda] Taoists' [Jade Palace] [Fire Dragon Building].....

Some of these contemplation methods were very dangerous and could cause spiritual disorder.

Afterwards, countless human spiritual masters came to the research and finally invented the Crystal Contemplation method, the safest and most effective contemplation that could clear people's excessive

thoughts.

No matter what the body was constituted of, the spirit was all the same.

So cats could also Crystal Contemplate.

Just like this, Jiang Li taught Big Black the crystal of the human intelligence in the dreams.

After his teaching, he disabled the spiritual state and puffed heavily.

Big Black was still sleeping but after a while, he woke up and looked at Jiang Li with confused eyes. Jiang Li waved his hand and made the pose of crystal contemplation.

Big Black copied him immediately because he already learnt it in his dream without any obstacle for communication.

In no time, he sat peacefully in his cat home.

Obviously, he entered the state of Crystal Contemplation.

"He entered the state this fast?" Jiang Li was shocked but understood afterwards. Cat's had purer thoughts than humans and therefore could cultivate very fast. But the hard thing was opening that door to wisdom and enlightenment of humans.

Unfortunately, there were too little spiritual masters that could enlighten animals.

Jiang Li could enlighten them? This was a miracle or it could be said that it was a magical ability of the brain of the universe.

However, he still wasn't as good as those spiritual masters. They could enlighten animals with one thought and open their intelligence but he had to first hypnotise the animals and then self hypnotise and then connect their spirits to enlighten them in their dreams.

"No wonder this magical art is called the Great Dream Heart Sutra." Jiang Li started testing things out for himself.

He cultivated with diligence in the park.

After he recovered his energy in fetal respiration, he tried to hypnotise another baby kitten.

In the blur, he felt his spirit radiating out again and entering the dream of the baby cat.

The baby cat was chasing butterflies happily in its dream.

"Second Meng, transform into a human....." Jiang Li appeared in its dream and sent out a thought.

Chapter 45 - Wang Daorong

"What...what..." the kitten immediately pounced and ran around him in circles. Jiang Li tried hard and guided him spiritually, "In a dream, you can become a person, in a dream, whatever you think is what it is..."

Sure enough, under his guidance, the little milk kitten turned into a little boy in his dream.

"Come, learn with me, this is a crystal..." A filthy crystal appeared behind Jiang Li and along with his breathing, the crystal kept eliminating impurities, becoming crystal clear.

This is in a dream. Whatever he thinks of will appear, it is very convenient to pass on the skills.

Second Meng, the little milk kitten followed and practiced with him.

Sou!

Under cultivation, everything in front of Jiang Li disappeared and he woke up.

His whole body was weak.

There were flashes of pain in his head. It was clearly because

transferring power in a dream and thinking activity is too intense. The brain cells, along with the body become unusually fatigued.

Fortunately there were no nosebleeds.

Since entering the third phase of deep sleep, his meditation "Brain of the Universe" was not so difficult.

He hastily took the "Green God Nutrition Serum". After taking a break, recovering and doing some quick-witted, he seemed to feel that his mental state was better than usual.

It seems that this was the best extreme exercise.

On this chilly night, he kept practicing in the park, passing the skills to these kittens, so every one of them will have learned crystal contemplation. Perhaps this will result in a miracle in the future?

The kittens will surely get stronger after they learn the practice.

Passing on skills in a dream is an extremely natural power of the mind. It is of great help with regards to the understanding of the interaction between the mind and the soul and the integration of spirit when he practices it.

In one night, he taught Crystal Contemplation to Big Black, Flower King, Big Meng to the Fifth Meng, these seven kittens. The sky was bright, it is already winter. The cold pressed against them, and when it came to the morning, snow actually started to fall. The whole place was a vast white.

His spirit was refreshed like after bathing in snow.

Although the weather was cold, it did not cause the slightest damage to his body. Based on his current repair, his life force reached a 1. He was definitely close to a martial arts master two hundred years ago in the country era.

Kittens naturally slept in their warm house on such a cold day. Those who had been taught Crystal Contemplation kept practicing. Jiang Li put some fish chips in their nest, as well as a part of the diluted nutrient solution.

They progressed very fast. Jiang Li even wanted to see after a semester, to what extent these cats will grow?

He suddenly jumped out onto the snowy ground and began to practice martial arts.

Boneless Jujitsu.

The body rocked at will, delicately boneless and twisted like a dragon and snake. All kinds of movements were effortless.

[Twisting Bone Attack].

[Projecting Bone Stab].

[Shattering Bone Collapsing the Clouds].

[Boulder Breaking Bone Shatter].

[Boneless Dragon Snake Dance].

The five moves were repeatedly displayed. Signs of fatigue did not appear. The body's muscles, veins and bones all had extremely strong transverse toughness. His breath was also very strong. A white wave would rush out at every breath that came out in the cold air.

Gradually he entered a mysterious state of mind. It seemed that the mind integrated with the scattered snowflakes. Every snowflake caused a ding dong sound as it fell, washing the distracting thoughts within.

The understanding of the life and death fight with the extraterrestrial warriors gradually released. His martial arts and spirit went up one level.

"Excellent. Your skills are not bad."

A sound came through.

Jiang Li moved quickly, all bone dances returned to normal.

He knew a master had come. Based on the present realm, he was aware of the rustle of leaves in the wind within a few hundred meters, even the flapping of a mosquito's wings when flying could not escape his eyes and ears.

He realised that this was definitely not by chance when the person was within ten steps of him. Even if the practice of martial arts reached the realm of altruism, it could not possibly be this slow.

A man appeared in his line of sight.

It was a middle-aged man dressed in a casual clothes with a normal appearance. He did not look burly but Jiang Li just felt that he was powerful!

"You are high school student Jiang Li, right?"

The middle-aged man held out his hand, "My name is Wang Daorong."

Jiang Li did not shake his hand. This kind of figure, he naturally will not easily be controlled by others. The other side must be controlled when shaking hands, however his body took a step back, "How do you know my name? Who are you?".

"I am Zheng Wenbing's teacher."

Wang Daorong smiled and nodded silently. Jiang Li was extremely vigilant. Him not shaking hands showed his astute mind and that he did not act rashly.

"Zheng Wenbing..." Hatred immediately flashed in Jiang Li's heart, "You came to deal with me?"

"No..." Wang Daorong shook his head. "Zheng Wenbing and your matter are completely unrelated. Just that kid can not even dominate me. I was just an ancient martial arts teacher his father invited. I came to find you today for another matter."

"I see."

Jiang Li gave a sigh of relief, with the mind, he felt that the middle aged man Wang Daorong in front of him was simply unfathomable. How could Zheng Wenbing order such a figure?

However, he did not let down his guard.

"I heard that you caught the Illusory Fox? Wang Daorong looked Jiang Li up and down, "You are very strong, but to catch the Illusory Fox is still impossible."

"I did not catch the Illusory Fox, I found him, thats all. It was surrounded by the police force." Jiang Li told the truth as it was. If the police didn't come quickly that time, his life would have also been over.

"Do you know that you are now in danger?" Wang Daorong's words caused Jiang Li to tense up again, "The Illusory Fox is an important member of the SSRO. You got him arrested. The SSRO will not let you nor your family get away with this. You will be wiped out in less than a day if you face the retaliation of the SSRO with your current strength!"

"The SSRO are that arrogant?" Jiang Li thought rapidly, he really did not expect this point, "They should go find the police if they want revenge.

What benefits do they have if they retaliate me?"

The SSRO is a terrorist organization and have been rendered heinous.

"To retaliate against you is a warning to others to not allow them to do work for the police." Wang Daorong looked at Jiang Li's expression, knowing that he began to worry, "You did not really think that with your mere strength, you could withstand the SSRO."

"Mr.Wang came to help me this time?"

Jiang Li licked his lips. He is no ordinary student, his thoughts is already of an adult's.

"You are well qualified." Wang Dao rong stood tall, naturally there was a surge of an imposing manner, "I can take you as a disciple and teach you ancient martial arts. I can also ensure that the SSRO will not hurt you and your family will be well protected. "

"There is such a good thing? Such thing as a free lunch?" Jiang Li froze and he suddenly blurted out an idea from his mind, "You are a member of the SSRO!"

He immediately regretted after he finished speaking.

Because after he spoke, Wang Daorong's eyes suddenly erupted a fierce murderous spirit causing a feeling of numbness in Jiang Li's hands and feet.

What he thought was powerful spiritual practice was somewhat inferior in front of Wang Daorong. The spiritual practice of the opposition can "sit in meditation"!

But then, Wang Daorong's imposing manner vanished.

He coldly asked, "How can you speculate this?"

"It's simple." Jiang Li calmed down. "First, only the government will speak out to protect me, and you are obviously not a member of the government. Even those who are really rich can not possibly go against the SSRO. Second, you said you can give me a lot of resources that even the rich can not get their hands upon, which also requires a huge force to do it. So I guessed that you are also a member of the SSRO who want to recover the organisations of ancient China, and this is fundamentally different to the Illusory Fox . "

They are many types of SSRO's because many countries existed in the 21st century two hundred years ago.

The Illusory Fox has white lineage, and opposes SSRO of China. There is still a brutal fight between them in the underground world.

"Your thinking is very agile. You could find so many flaws in just a wink of an eye. Are you not afraid of me murdering everyone?" Wang Daorong was also secretly scared.

"Mr. Wang, I do not remember anything I just said." Jiang Li quickly

said: "I'm just a small figure, do not drag me into this treacherous whirlpool okay?"

Jiang Li could not join the SSRO. Human unity is the trend of the times, it violates the historical trend.

Moreover, the government defines all members of the SSRO as a terrorist organization, and definitely will not let them go.

He will not join no matter what, even if there is greater temptation. Because what happens if it hurts his family?

"Do you think that the restoration of the country is the car that drives history backwards?" Wang Daorong's tone was deep, "However, you are of pure Chinese descent. You should know how great and sacred it is that we restore the glory of ancient China."

"Humans have already joined together to cope with the various civilizations in the universe. The universe is sinister, powerful civilizations may come at any time. It is foolish if humans do not stick together and fight each other. " At this moment, Jiang Li could only contend on strong grounds/argue strongly for what was right.

"You really thought that those executives was for the sake of the whole of humanity?" Wang Daorong smiled, "Let me first ask you, why did the high class establish an elite district?"

"That..." Jiang Li said, "the elite district is the product of the gap between the rich and the poor. The government is trying hard to conquer

the sky, to provide mankind with more resources, then expand the elite district step by step, and finally turn all the common areas into elite districts."

"Hmph!" Wang Daorong spat out two words, "Brainwashed!"

"I already have the ability to judge." Jiang Li said heavily.

"Your ability to judge? You are just a child after all." Wang Daorong stood upright, the imposing manner changed, like a worried senior official, "I ask you, humans constantly battle and plunder, and obtain large quantities of supplies, which place is the first to benefit from this?"

"The elite district." replied Jiang Li.

"After the elite district obtains the goods, they will become more and more powerful. In the end, they will get rid of the common district, this is a hard fact! One hundred years ago, the lifespan of the people of the elite district was 120 years old, while the lifespan of those in the common district was 100 years old, the gap was not big. What is it now? Do you know?" Wang Daorong's voice was like iron.

"180 years old." Jiang Li said, "This is the official report, I reckon there is a difference between the actual and estimation, the average lifespan of the elite area should have reached 200 years old."

"Not bad. Your estimation is pretty good." Wang Daorong nodded his head, "The difference is getting bigger and bigger. It is already two times that of the common area! The gap will still widen in the future."

"This is inevitable. Now the government has piloted a series of policies to increase the human welfare of the common area. The astral university was also set up so that the general area will have the opportunities for immigrants. "Jiang Li said, "Human welfare will get better and better, this is the general time. The students in my parents' generation, the general life force was only 0.6, while the students now have a life force close to 0.8. "

"Small favors." Wang Daorong sneered again and again, "Do you know of immortal world?"

"The immortal world?"

Jiang Li was surprised for a moment after he heard the term, and did not know why Wang Daorong would say such gibberish.

"The elite district will become stronger and stronger, and people among them will continue to increase their lifespan, and may even not die. Their powerful force is like that of the ancient gods." Wang Daorong's tone was not high, but every word was a devastating criticism, "The elite district is the prototype of the immortal world. In the near future, science and technology will become more and more developed, the first area to benefit will be the group of people from the elite district. They will become real celestial beings, and by that time, the elite will be completely divided from the common and they will become the Gods and immortals high above. There is a myth in ancient China, Emperor Zhuan Xu broke the stairway to heaven. You should have heard of this before. In ancient times, there was a stairway to heaven and people could climb into the sky. The Celestial Emperor ordered Zhuan Xu to break off the stairway to heaven, causing the sky and the people to separate. Is it

not similar to the present?"

"That..." Jiang Li is a perceptive person and knew what Wang Daorong said was not false. The break of the stairway to heaven was in fact to block the people's road to progress.

"Science and technology is developed, but what it brought to mankind was not equality, but for rulers to become God. The majority of humanity have become scapegoats. Think about it, if the rulers developed immortality medication, would he would seal it up for his own use, or give it to mankind?"

Wang Daorong's tone was such as gold and iron, "We must break the present human pattern!"

